This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

+ *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.

+ *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.

+ *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.

+ *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at `http://books.google.com/`

600084202M

MARIOTTI'S ITALIAN GRAMMAR.

A PRACTICAL GRAMMAR

OF THE

ITALIAN LANGUAGE.

A New Edition,

REVISED, ENLARGED, AND IMPROVED.

BY A. GALLENGA,

ITALIAN PROFESSOR IN LONDON UNIVERSITY COLLEGE, AUTHOR OF "ITALY PAST AND PRESENT," "HISTORY OF PIEDMONT," ETC. ETC.

LONDON:

WILLIAMS AND NORGATE,

14, HENRIETTA STREET, COVENT GARDEN,

AND 20, SOUTH FREDERICK STREET, EDINBURGH.

MDCCCLVIII.

303. d. 19.

JOHN CHILDS AND SON, PRINTERS.

CONTENTS.

Page

I.—Pronunciation 1

Vowels, 1, 2;—Consonants, 3;—*c*, *sc*, *g*, 4-7;—*h*, 8;—*gl*, 9;—*gn*, 10;—*gu*, 11;—*qu*, 12;—*s*, 13;—*z*, 14;—*r*, 15;—Diphthongs, 16;—Double Consonants, 17;—Accent, 18.

II.—Simple Articles 4

Definite Article, 4-7;—Indefinite Article, 8.

III.—Articles with Prepositions 6

Prepositions, 1;—Prepositions with Definite Articles, 2;—Prepositions with Indefinite Articles, 3;—Inversion of the English Genitive, 4, 5;—English Compound Nouns, 5;—Partitive Articles, 6.

IV.—Use of the Articles 10

V.—Gender of Nouns 15

Nouns in *o*, 2;—in *a*, 3; in *e*, 4;—in *i* and *u*, 5;—Peculiarities of Genders, 6.

VI.—Plural of Nouns 18

Plural of Masculines, 1;—of Feminines, 2, 3;—Nouns in *ca*, *ga*, *co*, *go*, *ia*, *io*, 3;—Irregular Plurals, 4, 5;—Redundant Nouns, 6-8.

VII.—Adjectives 22

Terminations of Adjectives, 1-4;—Their concordance, 5;—Their position, 6;—Peculiarities of Adjectives, 7.

VIII.—Comparatives and Superlatives 26

Comparative of Superiority and Inferiority, 1;—of Equality, 2;—Relative Superlative, 3;—Absolute Superlative, 4; Comparatives and Superlatives derived from Latin, 5.

Page

IX.—Augmentatives and Diminutives 30

X.—Numeral Adjectives 34
Cardinal Numbers, 1,2;—Ordinal Numbers, 3,4;—Numeral Substantives, 5;—Peculiarities of Numbers, 6.

XI.—Personal Pronouns 38
Their Declension, 1;—Use of the Nominative, 2.

XII.—Conjunctive Pronouns 41
Their etymology, 1;—Their position, 2;—Their use, 3.

XIII.—Double Conjunctive Pronouns 44
Their combinations, 1-3; — The Pronouns with Reflected Verbs, 4.

XIV.—Possessive Pronouns 49
Their terminations, 1;—Their use, 2;—Peculiarities, 3-6.

XV.—Demonstrative Pronouns 54
Questo, cotesto, and *quello,* 1,2;—*Questo,* and *quello,* 3;—Substantive Pronouns, 4;—*Ciò, ciò che,* etc., 6.

XVI.—Relative Pronouns 57
Quale, 1;—*Che, cui, chi,* 2-5;—*Onde,* 8; Interrogative Pronouns, 9-12.

XVII.—Indefinite Pronouns 62
Ogni, qualche, qualunque, 1;—*Ognuno,* etc., 2;—*Alcuno,* etc., 3;—*Tutto,* 4;—*Tale,* 5;—*Esso,* 6;—*Altro,* 7;—Peculiarities, 8.

XVIII.—Regular Verbs 66
General Remarks, 1-4; Paradigm, 4.

XIX.—Auxiliary Verbs 71
Avere and *essere,* 1; Compound Tenses, 2;—Active Verbs, 3;—Passive Verbs, 4;—Agreement of Participles, 5-7;—*Andare, stare, venire,* used as Auxiliaries, 8, 9;—The Particle *si,* 10, 11.

XX.—Moods and Tenses 77
Imperfect and Preterit, 1-4;—Compound Tenses, 5-7;—Use of the Subjunctive, 8;—of the Infinitive, 9;—of the Participle, 10, 11.

XXI.—Irregular Verbs; First Conjugation . . . 86
General Remarks, 1-5;—Verbs in *care* and *gare,* in *ciare* and *giare,* etc., 6; *Andare, dare,* and *stare,* and their Compounds, 7.

XXII.—Second Conjugation 91
Regular Verbs, their peculiarities, 1-3;—Irregular Preterits and Past Participles of Verbs in *aere,* in *bere,* in *cere,* in *dere,* in *gere,* in *guere,* in *lere,* in *gliere,* in *mere,* in *nere,* in *pere,* in *rere,* in *tere,* in *vere,* 4.

Page

XXIII.—Second Conjugation, continued 96
Trarre, 2;—*Condurre*, *dire*, *fare*, *piacere*, 3;—*Cadere*, *vedere*, *sedere*, 4.

XXIV.—Second Conjugation, continued 102
Spegnere, *cingere*, 1;—*Valere*, *dolere*, *volere*, *solere*, *svellere*, 2;—*Scegliere*, *togliere*, 3; *Rimanere*, *porre*, *tenere*, 4; —*Sapere*, 5;—*Parere*, 6; *Potere*, 7; *Dovere*, *bere*, 8.

XXV.—Third Conjugation 108
Regular Verbs, 1; — Verbs in *isco*, 2,3;—*Seguire*, 4;—*Salire*, 5;—*Apparire*, 6;—*Morire*, 7; —*Venire*, 8; —*Udire*, 9;—*Uscire*, 10;— *Cucire*, 11;—*Empire*, 12;—*Aprire*, 13, etc.

XXVI.—Defective Verbs 113
Angere, 1;—*Algere*, 2;—*Arrogere*, 3;—*Calere*, 4;—*Colere*, 5; — *Estollere*, 6;—*Fiedere*, 7;—*Gire*, 8;—*Ire*, 9;—*Licere*, 10, etc.

XXVII.—Prepositions 115
Di, 1;—*A*, 2;—*Da*, 3;—*Per*, 4;—*Con*, 5;—*In*, 6;—*Tra*, 7;—*Su*, 8, etc.

XXVIII.—Adverbs 123

XXIX.—Conjunctions 127

XXX.—Interjections 131

XXXI.—Construction 134
Inversions, 1-3—Ellipsis, 4-7;—Modes of Address, *Tu*, *Voi*, and *Ella*, 8-15.

ITALIAN GRAMMAR.

I.—PRONUNCIATION.

1. The Italian Language has five vowels, *a*, *e*, *i*, *o*, *u*.

2. Their approximate sounds in English are:

a	father.	*Ex.* *Pá-pa*,	Pope.
e	fate.	*vé-na*,	vein.
	fair.	*ér-ba*,	herb.
i	meet	*ní-do*,	nest.
o	rose.	*vó-lo*,	flight.
	cause.	*ló-de*,	praise.
u	root.	*mú-to*,	dumb.

(*a*) The *e* and *o* have a *close* and an *open* sound. The difference, however, is only perceptible when the accent of the word falls upon those vowels themselves, as in *véna*, *érba*, *vólo*, *lóde*. This difference cannot be reduced to any positive rule. Both vowels are open when accented at the end of the word, as in *te-mè*, he feared; *a-mò*, he loved. The *o* is generally open when it derives from a Latin *au*, as in *pó-sa*, pause (from pausa), and close when it derives from a Latin *u*, as in *vol-to* face (from vultus).

(*b*) The *j* is not generally, and, at any rate, not necessarily, used in modern Italian editions. Whenever it occurs, its sound should be like that of the Italian *i* or *ii*.

3. The consonants *b*, *d*, *f*, *l*, *m*, *n*, *p*, *t*, *v*, are pronounced as in English.

4. The consonants *c*, *sc*, and *g*, have a *hard* sound before *a*, *o*, *u*, and a *soft* sound before *e* and *i*.

5. The hard sound of *c* is like the English *k*,—*ca*,

co, cu. The soft sound is somewhat like an English *ch*,—*ce, ci.*

6. The hard *sc* sounds like the English *sk*,—*sca, sco, scu.* The soft sound resembles the English *sh*,—*sce, sci.*

7. The hard *g* is like the English *g* in the same syllables, *ga, go, gu.* The soft *g* is like the English *j* or *dg*,—*ge, gi.*

8. The *h* has no sound of its own. But it hardens the sound of *c, sc,* and *g,* in those cases in which those consonants would otherwise be soft.

Ex. *ce, che; ci, chi; sce, sche; sci, schi; ge, ghe; gi, ghi.*

9. *Gl,* before *a, e, o, u,* is pronounced as in English. Ex. *gla, gle, glo, glu;* before *i,* it has a peculiar sound, somewhat resembling the *ll* in the English words *brilliant, million.* Ex. *é-gli,* he; *fi-glio,* son.

(*a*) In the words *Angli, negligere, geroglifico, gl* is pronounced as in English.

10. *Gn* has a peculiar sound somewhat like *ni* in the words *union, onion; gna, gne, gni, gno, gnu.* Ex. *dé-gno,* worthy.

11. *Gu,* in the syllables *gua, gue, gui, guo,* is pronounced as in the English words *anguish, languish.* Ex. *lin-gua,* tongue.

12. *Qu,* in the syllables *qua, que, qui, quo,* sounds as in the English words *vanquish, relinquish.* Ex. *é-quo,* equitable.

13. *S* may have either a *sibilant* sound, as in the English words *saint, hearse,* as *sán-to,* saint; *pen-so,* I think; or a somewhat softened sound, peculiar to the Italian, as *pó-sa,* pause; *có-sa,* thing.

(*b*) The soft sound occurs when the *s* is placed between vowels, as in *ri-so,* rice; *ro-sa,* rose; and also before the consonants *b, d, g, l, m, n, r, v.* Ex. *sbá-glio,* mistake; *sdé-gno,* disdain, etc. The sibilant sound occurs when the *s* is before vowels, at the beginning of a word, or preceded by a consonant, as in *se-ra,* evening; *sén-so,* sense; before the consonants *c, f, p, q, t,* as in *sca-glia,* scale; *sfi-da,* challenge, etc.; also between vowels in compound words. Ex. *dicesi* (*dice-si*), they say; *diségno* (*di-ségno*), design.

14. *Z* has a *hard* sound, somewhat like an English *ts*, or *tz*, as in *sá-zio*, sated; *páz-zo*, fool; and a soft sound, somewhat like an English *ds*, or *dz*, as in *zí-o*, uncle; *méz-zo*, means.

(*a*) The *z* is hard when it derives from a Latin *t*, *ct*, or *pt*. Ex. *gŕá-zia*, grace (from gratia); *a-zió-ne*, action (from actio); *nóz-ze*, wedding (from nuptiæ). It is soft when derived from a Latin *d*. Ex. *róz-zo*, rude (from rudis); or from a Greek ζ, as in *zó-na*, zone; *o-riz-zonte*, horizon. It is *generally* hard after a consonant, as in *sén-za*, without.

15. The *r* has a peculiar sound, especially at the end of the syllables, *ar*, *er*, *ir*, *or*, *ur*, where the vowels, unlike in English, preserve their sounds in all their purity, *a-r*, *e-r*, &c.

16. Every letter is pronounced. Every vowel distinctly heard, even when two or three form but one syllable, as *ciò*, that; *può*, he can; *miei*, mine; *tuoi*, thine:—Compare *ce-lo*, I hide, with *cie-lo*, heaven.

17. Double consonants are pronounced with double emphasis.

(*a*) The mute consonants *b*, *c*, *d*, *p*, *q*, *t*, *v*, with two distinct and somewhat separate sounds, as *făt-to*, deed; the liquid *l*, *m*, *n*, *r*, the *f*, and *s*, with a continued sound, as *dăm-ma*, doe; *sĕr-ra*, saw. In all cases of double consonants, the preceding vowel acquires a shorter, sharper sound. Compare the above words with *fā-to*, fate; *dā-ma*, lady; *sē-ra*, evening. The soft double *c*, as in *tdc-cio*, I am silent, is pronounced somewhat like *tătch-chio;* the soft double *g*, as in *vég-gio*, I see, is pronounced like *vĕdg-gio*.

18. Every word has an accent. Peculiar stress is laid on the accented vowel. Ex. *ā-mŏ*, I love; *ā-mă-nŏ*, they love. At the end of a word, the accented vowel has a short, sharp sound, as *ă-mò*, he loved.

(*a*) The position of the accent must be determined by practice. When it falls on the last syllable, the accent is always marked thus, *amò*, he loved. Most Italian words have the accent on the penultimate syllable, or last but one, fewer on the last but two, very few on the last but three. The accents have been marked on the following exercise.

Exercise I.

chié-sa, church. *slác-cio*, I untie.

cióc-ca,	tuft.	*á-e-re,*	air.
cén-cio,	rag.	*so-á-ve,*	sweet.
cián-cia,	idle talk.	*chíc-che-ra,*	cup.
strác-cio,	rag.	*chiác-che-ra,*	chat.
schiát-ta,	race.	*záz-ze-ra,*	mane.
ér-to,	steep.	*zan-zá-ra,*	gnat.
ír-to,	bristling.	*e-só-so,*	hated.
ór-to,	garden.	*gen-gí-va,*	gum.
úr-to,	shock.	*gió-vi-ne,*	youth.
áu-ra,	air.	*schia-máz-zo,*	clamour.
cí-gno,	swan.	*au-ró-ra,*	dawn.
cí-glio,	eyelid.	*sog-ghí-gno,*	grin.
giú-gno,	june.	*fi-gliuó-lo,*	-son.
gió-go,	yoke.	*quan-tún-que,*	although.
quál-che,	some.	*pre-di-cò,*	he preached.
chec-chè,	whatever.	*pre-dí-co,*	I foretell.
lég-ge,	law.	*pré-di-co,*	I preach.
ghí-gno,	grin.	*pré-di-ca-no,*	they preach.
ró-so,	gnawed.	*scé-glie-re,*	to choose.
rós-so,	red.	*spé-gne-re,*	to quench.
róz-zo,	rude.	*frig-ge-re,*	to fry.
véz-zo,	necklace.	*ú-lu-la,*	he howls.
guíz-zo,	quiver.	*zé-fi-ro,*	zephyr.
á-glio,	garlic.	*a-é-re-o,*	aerial.
scác-chi,	chess.	*ca-pi-tá-no,*	captain.
guér-ra,	war.	*cá-pi-ta-no,*	they happen.

II.—SIMPLE ARTICLES.

1. The Italian Language has two genders, masculine and feminine; and two numbers, singular and plural.

2. The cases are distinguished by articles and prepositions.

3. The articles are definite or indefinite.

4. The definite articles are *lo*, pl. *gli*; *il*, pl. *i*, for masculine nouns; *la*, pl. *le*, for feminine (the).

5. *Lo*, pl. *gli*, is used before masculine nouns beginning with *s* followed by a consonant; or beginning with *z*; or beginning with a vowel.

Ex.	*lo spirito*,	pl. *gli spiriti*,	the spirit, the spirits.
	lo zio,	*gli zii*,	the uncle, etc.
	l' amore,	*gli amori*,	the love.
	l' errore,	*gli errori*,	the error.
	l' onore,	*gli onori*,	the honour.
	l' umore,	*gli umori*,	the humour.
	l' Italiano,	*gl' Italiani*,	the Italian.

(*a*) *Lo* and *gli* are liable to elision—that is, to drop their final vowel and substitute an apostrophe, before vowels. With *lo* the elision may take place before all vowels; with *gli* only before *i*.

(*b*) With nouns beginning with *s*, the article *il*, pl. *i*, may also be used: *il zio*, pl. *i zii*.

6. *Il*, pl. *i*, is used before all other masculine nouns.

Ex. *il padre*, pl. *i padri*, the father.

(*a*) *Dio*, God, receives the article *gli*, instead of *i*, in the plural. Ex. *Il Dio*, the God; pl. *gli Dei*, the Gods.

7. *La*, pl. *le*, is used before all feminine nouns.

Ex.	*la madre*,	pl. *le madri*,		the mother.
	l' anima,	*le anime*,	or *l' anime*,	the soul.
	l' ira,	*le ire*,	or *l' ire*,	the anger.
	l' ombra,	*le ombre*,	or *l' ombre*,	the shade.
	l' uva,	*le uve*,	or *l' uve*,	the grape.
	l' erba,	*l' erbe*,		the herb.

(*a*) *La* may suffer elision before all vowels. With *le* the elision is optional before *a*, *i*, *o*, *u*, but should be made before *e*.

8. The indefinite articles are *uno* and *una* (*a* or *an*). *Uno* is used before masculine nouns beginning with *s* followed by a consonant, or beginning by *z*. *Un* before all other masculine nouns. *Una* before feminine nouns beginning with a consonant; *un'* before feminine nouns beginning with a vowel.

Ex. *uno spirito*, a spirit.
uno zio, an uncle.
un amore, a love.
una madre, a mother.
un' anima, a soul.

Exercise II.

The master and the pupil. The king and the queen.
The bridegroom and the bride. The hero and the heroine.
The emperor and the empress. The prince and the princess.
The altar and the victim. The ambassador.

Master, *maestro*, pl. *maestri*, m.; pupil, *scolare*, pl. *scolari*, m.: king, *re*, pl. *re*, m.; queen, *regina*, pl. *regine*, f.; bridegroom, *sposo*, pl. *sposi*, m.; bride, *sposa*, pl. *spose*, f.; hero, *eroe*, pl. *eroi*, m.; heroine, *eroina*, pl. *eroine*, f.; emperor, *imperatore*, pl. *imperatori*, m.; empress, *imperatrice*, pl. *imperatrici*, f.; prince, *principe*, pl. *principi*, m.; princess, *principessa*, pl. *principesse*, f.; altar, *altare*, pl. *altari*, m.; victim, *vittima*, pl. *vittime*, f.; ambassador, *ambasciatore*, pl. *ambasciatori*, m.

A king and a queen. The ambassadors. The heroes. The heroines. The hymns. The emperors. The zeal. The pupils and the masters. The friends. The nettles. The beauty. The universe. The flowers. The gardens.

Hymn, *inno*, pl. *inni*, m.; zeal, *zelo*, m.; friend, *amico*, pl. *amici*, m.; *amica*, pl. *amiche*, f.; nettle, *ortica*, pl. *ortiche*, f.; beauty, *bellezza*, pl. *bellezze*, f.; universe, *universo*, m.; flower, *fiore*, pl. *fiori*, m.; garden, *giardino*, pl. *giardini*, m.

III.—ARTICLES WITH PREPOSITIONS.

1. The prepositions which are immediately connected with the declension of articles are the following:

Di, of, *con*, with,
a, to or at, *su*, on, upon,

da, from or by, *per*, for or by,
in, in, *tra*, or *fra*, among, between.

2. Articles and Prepositions combine in the declensions as follows:

		lo	*gli*	*il*	*i*	*la*	*le*
Nominative or Accusative							
Genitive	of	*di*	*dello*	*degli*	*del*	*dei* or *de'*	*della*	*delle*
Dative	to	*a*	*allo*	*agli*	*al*	*ai*	*a'*	*alla*	*alle*
Ablative	from	*da*	*dallo*	*dagli*	*dal*	*dai*	*da'*	*dalla*	*dalle*
	in	*in*	*nello*	*negli*	*nel*	*nei*	*ne'*	*nella*	*nelle*
	with	*con*	*collo*	*cogli*	*col*	*coi*	*co'*	*colla*	*colle*
	on	*su*	*sullo*	*sugli*	*sul*	*sui*	*su'*	*sulla*	*sulle*
	for	*per*	*per lo*	*per gli*	*pel*	*pei*	*pe'*	*per la*	*per le*
	among	*tra*	*tra lo*	*tra gli*	*tra'l*	*trai*	*tra'*	*tra la*	*tra le*

(*a*) *per* and *tra* only combine with *il* and *i*—*pel* and *pei*, not *pello*, *pegli*, *pella*, *pelle*, *trallo*, &c.

Example.

lo specchio,	the mirror.	*il padre*,	the father.
dello specchio,	of the mirror.	*del padre*,	of the father.
gli specchi,	the mirrors.	*i padri*,	the fathers.
dagli specchi,	from the mirrors.	*dai padri*,	from the fathers.
la madre,	the mother.	*le madri*,	the mothers.
nella madre,	in the mother.	*per le madri*,	for the mothers.
l' onore,	the honour.	*gli onori*,	the honours.
sull' onore,	on the honour.	*dagli onori*,	from the honours.
l' Italiano,	the Italian.	*gl' Italiani*,	the Italians.
coll' Italiano,	with the Italian.	*tra gl' Italiani*,	among the Italians.
l' anima,	the soul.	*le anime*,	the souls.
nell' anima,	in the soul.	*sulle anime*,	on the souls.
l' erba,	the grass.	*l' erbe*,	the herbs.
sull' erba,	on the grass.	*tra l' erbe*.	among the herbs.

3. Prepositions with Indefinite articles.

		uno	*un*	*una*	*un'*
Nominative or Accusative					
Genitive	of *di*	*l'uno*	*d'un*	*d'una*	*d'un'*
Dative	to *a*	*ad uno*	*ad un*	*ad una*	*ad un'*

Ablative	from	*da*	*da uno*	*da un*	*da una*	*da un'*
	in	*in*	*in uno*	*in un*	*in una*	*in un'*
	with	*con*	*con uno*	*con un*	*con una*	*con un'*
	on	*su*	*sur uno*	*sur un*	*sur una*	*sur un'*
	for	*per*	*per uno*	*per un*	*per una*	*per un'*
	among	*tra*	*tra uno*	*tra un*	*tra una*	*tra un'*

(*a*) *uno* and *una* only affect the prepositions *di*, *a*, and *su;* we may equally say *di un* or *d' un*, *a un* or *ad un*, *su un* or *sur un* or *su d' un*, *su una* or *sur una*, &c.

Example.

un padre,	a father.	*una madre,*	a mother.
d' un padre,	of a father.	*su d' una madre,*	on a mother.
ad un padre,	to a father.	*fra una madre,*	between a mother.
uno specchio,	a mirror.	*un' anima,*	a soul.
da uno specchio,	from a mirror.	*in un' anima,*	in a soul.
in uno specchio,	in a mirror.	*con un' anima,*	with a soul.
un onore,	an honour.	*sur un' anima,*	on a soul.
per un onore,	for an honour.	*per un' anima,*	for a soul.

4. The order of the English Genitive is reversed in the Italian construction.

Example.

The king's anger (The anger of the king),	*l' ira del re.*
The gardener's spade,	*la vanga del giardiniere.*
John's head,	*la testa di Giovanni.*
Mary's tongue,	*la lingua di Maria.*

5. English compound nouns must be equally decomposed and reversed.

Example.

In the moon-light (In or to the light of the moon),	*al lume della luna.*
Rose-leaves,	*foglie di rose.*
A sun-beam,	*un raggio di sole.*
The evening star,	*la stella della sera.*

6. Partitive Articles.

The articles *dello, degli, del, dei, della, delle,* are used as partitive articles in the sense of *some, any, a few.*

Example.

Datemi del pane,	give me some bread.
Avete delle noci?	have you any nuts?
Mi diede delle pere,	he gave me a few pears.

(*a*) The partitive article is not used when the object is not to convey an idea of quantity.

Example.

Non mangia mai pane,	he never eats bread, or, any bread.
Beviamo sempre vino,	we always drink wine.
Vende birra e liquori,	he sells beer and liquors.

Exercise III.

The king's friend. The queen's friends. The master's stick. The emperor's son. The queen's garden. With the empress's children. From the beauty of the universe. In the hours of the morning. Among the flowers of the garden.

Stick, *bastone*, pl. *bastoni*, m.; son, *figlio*, pl. *figli*, m.; child, *fanciullo*, pl. *fanciulli*, m.; hour, *ora*, pl. *ore*, f.; morning, *mattina*, pl. *mattine*, f.

The keys of the garden door. On the garden door. The emperor's flatterers. The hymn of the prophet. With the hymns of the Lord. The king's uncle. The queen's aunts. The prince's uncles. An uncle of the princess.

Key, *chiave*, pl. *chiavi*, f.; door, *uscio*, pl. *usci*, m.; garden (kitchen-garden), *orto*, pl. *orti*, m.; flatterer, *adulatore*, pl. *adulatori*, m.; prophet, *profeta*, pl. *profeti*, m.; Lord, *Signore*, pl. *Signori*, m.; uncle, *zio*, pl. *zii*, m.; aunt, *zia*, pl. *zie*, f.

An hour. On a door. From a garden. On the door of a garden. With a stick. With the master's stick. The beauty of a child. Between the king and the queen. From the friends of the king. To the child's friends.

Enemy, *nemico*, pl. *nemici*, m.

The seasons of the year. The days of the week. In the hollow of the hand. On the street. To the post. With the carriage. In the inkstand. On the roof. Of

the man. To the woman. With the men. From the women. Of a man. To a woman. With the women. From the men.

Season, *stagione*, pl. *stagioni*, f.; week, *settimana*, pl. *settimane*, f.; year, *anno*, pl. *anni*, m.; day, *giorno*, pl. *giorni*, m.; hollow, *concavo*, m.; hand, *mano*, pl. *mani*, f.; street, *strada*, pl. *strade*, f.; post, *posta*, f.; carriage, *carrozza*, pl. *carrozze*, f.; inkstand, *calamaio*, pl. *calamai*, m.; roof, *tetto*, pl. *tetti*, m.; man, *uomo*, pl. *uomini*, m.; woman, *donna*, pl. *donne*, f.

For the English of many words occurring in the Exercises, reference must be made to previous Exercises, or to the Examples. Verbs and other parts of speech not belonging to the lesson, are generally given at the end of each vocabulary.

IV.—USE OF THE ARTICLES.

1. The articles are used in Italian upon general rules and principles analogous to the English.

Example.

Il *cavallo* dell' *Imperatore*,	*The* Emperor's horse.
Un *cavallo* dell' *Imperatore*,	*A* horse *of the* Emperor.
Il *cavallo* d'un *Imperatore*,	*The* horse *of an* Emperor.

(*a*) However,—(i.)—The definite article is used in Italian when the noun is taken in a general and comprehensive sense.

Example.

L' *uomo nasce* al *lavoro*,	Man is born to work.

(ii.)—It is used before the infinitive of verbs, before adjectives and adverbs, when used substantively.

Example.

Il *cavalcare dà forza e coraggio*,	Riding gives strength and spirit.
Il *dolce è misto* all' *amaro*,	Sweetness is mixed with bitterness.
Vi dirò il *come* e il *perchè*,	I' ll tell you how and why.

(iii.)—On the contrary, the article may be omitted when the object is sufficiently determined by circumstances.

Example.

La *serva è* in *cantina*,	The maid is in *the* cellar.
Lo zio era medico,	The uncle was *a* physician.

(iv.)—The definite article may be used before proper names of persons when an adjective or noun is sufficiently implied.

Example.

La *Caterina*, Catherine, meaning la bella *Caterina*, la cara *Caterina*, la nostra Caterina, etc.

Il *Tasso*, Tasso, meaning il Poeta *Tasso*, il celebre *Tasso*, etc.

(v.)—The definite article is generally used before proper names of countries, when the whole country is comprehensively designated.

Example.

La *Lombardia è fertile*,	Lombardy is fruitful.
La *Corsica appartiene* alla *Francia*,	Corsica belongs to France.

2. The following examples may give some useful hints as to the use of the article.

La Provvidenza del *Cielo*,	The providence of Heaven.
Nel fiore della *gioventù*,	In the prime of youth.
Allo *spuntar* del *giorno*,	At day-break
Cammino collo *stampelle*,	I walk with crutches.
L' *ozio è il padre di tutti i vizi*,	Idleness is the parent of all vices.
Gli *uomini son retti* dal *timore*,	Men are ruled by fear.
Attila, *flagello di Dio*,	Attila, *the* scourge of God.
Pio Nono, Pontefice regnante,	Pius *the* Ninth, *the* reigning Pontiff.
Le *Commedie* del *Goldoni*,	Goldoni's comedies.
La *Francia è irrequieta*,	France is restless.
L'*Inghilterra è la regina dei mari*,	England is the queen of the seas.
Carlo Decimo, Re di Francia,	Charles *the* Tenth, King of France.
La *gloria dell' Inghilterra*,	England's glory.
Vino di Borgogna,	Burgundy wine.
La *Sardegna è incolta*,	Sardinia is uncultivated.
I *Turchi espugnavano Candia*,	The Turks took Candia by force of arms
L' *Inghilterra possiede Malta e Corfù, ma non la Sicilia*,	England possesses Malta and Corfu, but not Sicily.
Vita di Torquato Tasso,	*A* life of Torquato Tasso.
Storia d' Italia, Libro Primo,	*The* History of Italy, Book *the* First.
Anch' io sono pittore,	I too am *a* painter.
Son Lucchese per servirla,	I am *a* Lucchese at your orders.
Suo zio è medico,	His uncle is *a* physician.

Suo zio è un medico celeberrimo,	His uncle is a very celebrated physician.
Dio creò il mondo dal *nulla,*	God created the world out of nothing.
Avete letto il *Tasso?*	Have you read Tasso?
Prestatemi il primo tomo di Dante,	Lend me the first volume of Dante.
Chiamate la *Maria,*	Call Mary.
Regnava ancora Maria,	Mary still reigned.
Leggete la *Maria Stuard adi Schiller,*	Read Schiller's Maria Stuart.
Recitano il *Saul d' Alfieri,*	They perform Alfieri's Saul.
Paragona Saffo alla *Stael!*	He compares Sappho with Madame de Stael!
Dieci lire il *braccio,*	Ten pounds *a* yard.
Un soldo la *dozzina,*	A penny *a* dozen.
Tre lezioni la *settimana,*	Three lessons *a* week.
Venti soldi il *cento,*	Twenty pence *a* hundred.
Costa mille franchi,	It costs *a* thousand francs.
Viva cento anni,	May he live *a* hundred years.
Il valore e la *prudenza del Re,*	The valour and prudence of the King.
La clemenza e bontà della Regina,	The clemency and goodness of the Queen.
L' ignavia e la *fiacchezza del Principe,*	The baseness and weakness of the Prince.
Per prati e campi,	Over meadows and fields.
Pei prati e pei campi,	Over the meadows and the fields.
Per monti e valli,	Through hills and dales.
Pei monti e per le valli,	Through the hills and the dales.
Dal marito e dalla *moglie,*	From the husband and the wife.
Tra 'l marito e la moglie,	Between the husband and the wife.
Pel padre e per *la figlia,*	For the father and the daughter.
Chi è il padron di casa?	Who is the master of *the* house?
Sono andati a teatro,	They have gone to *the* theatre.
La famiglia è in campagna,	The family are in *the* country.
Dalla sala si passa in giardino,	From the parlour is the way to *the* garden.
Il *pranzo è in tavola.*	Dinner is on *the* table.
Pranziamo più spesso in cucina che in sala,	We dine oftener in *the* kitchen than in *the* parlour.
In chiesa coi *santi e in taverna coi ghiottoni*	At church with saints, and with gluttons at *the* tavern

Exercise IV.

The day of judgment. The fear of death. The king's

anger. The soul of the universe. By Heaven's providence. The shadow of the tree. The shadows of the clouds. Among the grass and flowers. Heroes despise honours and pleasures. Some flowers. Some grass.

Judgment, *giudizio*, m.; fear, *timore*, m.; death, *morte*, f.; anger, *ira*, f.; soul, *anima*, f.; universe, *universo*, m.; heaven, *cielo*, m.; providence, *provvidenza*, f.; shadow, *ombra*, pl. *ombre*, f.; tree, *albero*, pl. *alberi*, m.; cloud, *nube*, pl. *nubi*, f.; grass, *erba*, pl. *erbe*, f.; honour, *onore*, pl. *onori*, m.; pleasure, *piacere*, pl. *piaceri*, m.; despise, *disprezzano*.

God is the judge of men's deeds. The snake in the grass. For heaven's sake. The church bells. The moonlight. At sun-rise. On the top of the Alps. The mountains of the moon. The sands of the desert. The dust of the fields.

God, *Dio*, pl. *Dei*, m.; judge, *giudice*, pl. *giudici*, m.; deed, *azione*, pl. *azioni*, f.; snake, *angue*, m.; sake, *amore*, m.; church, *chiesa*, pl. *chiese*, f.; bell, *campana*, pl. *campane*, f.; moon, *luna*, f.; light, *lume*, m.; sun-rise, *spuntar del sole*, m.; top, *cima*, pl. *cime*, f.; Alp, *Alpe*, pl. *Alpi*, f.; mountain, *monte*, p. *monti*, m.; sand, *arena*, pl. *arene*, f.; desert, *deserto*, pl. *deserti*, m.; dust, *polve*, f.; field, *campo*, pl. *campi*, m.; is, *è*.

The remedy of evils. The garden of Europe. Molière's works, volume the third. Slow to love and to anger. The fields and the meadows. In the fields and meadows. Through the fields and meadows. Along the fields and meadows.

Remedy, *rimedio*, pl. *rimedi*, m.; evil, *male*, pl. *mali*, m.; Europe, *Europa*, f.; work, *opera*, pl. *opere*, f.; volume, *tomo*, pl. *tomi*, m.; third, *terzo*; meadow, *prato*, pl. *prati*, m.; slow, *lento*; through, *per*; along, *lungo*.

Death is the end of evils. Italy is the garden of Europe. Milton, the English poet. Pope, also a poet. America was discovered by the Italians. The king is in

the parlour. The queen is in the garden. London is the metropolis of England. Charles the First, King of England. Cæsar's friends. Cato's enemies. From Rome to Babylon.

End, *termine*, m.; Italy, *Italia*, f.; English poet, *poeta Inglese*, m.; America, *America*, f.; Italian, *Italiano*, pl. *Italiani*, m.; parlour, *sala*, pl. *sale*, f.; London, *Londra*, f.; metropolis, *capitale*, f.; England, *Inghilterra*, f.; Charles, *Carlo*, m.; first, *primo*, m.; Cæsar, *Cesare*; Cato, *Catone*; Rome, *Roma*; Babylon, *Babilonia*; also, *anch' egli*; was discovered, *fu scoperta*; is, *è*.

On the banks of the stream. Along the sea-shore. I read with spectacles. I write with steel pens. In the heart of summer. From the fury of fortune. Men's passions. Women's whims. Castles in the air. Children's playthings.

Bank, *sponda*, pl. *sponde*, f.; stream, *rio*, m.; shore, *riva*, pl. *rive*, f.; sea, *mare*, pl. *mari*, m.; spectacles, *occhiali*, pl. m.; pen, *penna*, pl. *penne*, f.; steel, *acciaio*, m.; heart, *cuore*, m.; summer, *state*, f.; fury, *furore*, m.; fortune, *fortuna*, f.; passion, *passione*, pl. *passioni*, f.; whim, *capriccio*, pl. *capricci*, m.; castle, *castello*, pl. *castelli*, m.; air, *aria*, f.; child (baby), *bambino*, pl. *bambini*, m.; plaything, *trastullo*, pl. *trastulli*, m. I read, *leggo*; I write, *scrivo*.

The queen is in the country. The king is not at home. The father is in town. The maid is in the cellar. We are going to the theatre. She is gone to church. The mother is at church. The children are at school. The children are going to school.

Country, *campagna*, f.; home, *casa*, f.; town, *città*, f.; maid, *fantesca*, f.; cellar, *cantina*, f.; theatre, *teatro*, m.; church, *chiesa*, f.; father, *padre*, pl. *padri*, m.; mother, *madre*, pl. *madri*, f.; child, *fanciullo*, pl. *fanciulli*, m.; school, *scuola*, f.

Is, *è;* is not, *non è;* at, *in;* we are going, *andiamo;* she is gone, *è andata;* are going, *vanno.*

V.—GENDER OF NOUNS.

1. All Italian nouns end by a vowel. Most of them by *a*, *o*, *e*.

2. Nouns in *o* are masculine, as *il maestro*, the master; *il libro*, the book.

(*a*) Except *la mano*, the hand; *eco*, echo; and a few proper names of women, as *Saffo*, Sappho; *Atropo*, Atropos; etc.

3. Nouns in *a* are feminine, as *la sposa*, the bride; *la carta*, the paper.

(*a*) Except,—(i.)—Proper names of men, as *Andrea*, Andrew.

(ii.)—Names of men's dignities, offices, and professions, as *il papa*, the pope; and so *duca*, duke; *poeta*, poet; *profeta*, prophet; *artista*, artist; *giornalista*, journalist; *Monarca*, Monarch.

(iii.)—Nouns chiefly from a neuter-Greek, as *il clima*, the climate; and so *stemma*, escutcheon; *dramma*, *poema*, *problema*, *epigramma*; *scisma*, schism; *diadema*, *tema*, theme; *dogma*, *idioma*, *sistema*, *sofisma*; and so, *pianeta*, planet; etc.

4. The gender of nouns in *e* cannot be reduced to general rules, and must be acquired by practice.

(*a*) However,—(i.)—Nouns in *ore* are mostly masculine, as *lo splendore*, the splendour; *il dolore*, sorrow; etc.

(ii.)—Nouns in *udine*, *uggine*, *zione*, and most of those in *ione*, are feminine, as *la solitudine*, solitude; *la ruggine*, rust; *la nazione*, the nation; *l' unione*, the union; etc. etc.

5. Nouns in *i* and *u* are very few; their gender cannot be determined by rule.

(*a*) Those in *i* are mostly masculine, as *il pari*, the peer; except *la crisi*, the crisis; *la tesi*, the thesis; *la sintassi*, the syntax; *la metropoli*, the metropolis.

Those in *u* are generally feminine, as *la virtù*, virtue; *la tribù*, the tribe. Except *Gesù*, Jesus; *il Perù*, Peru.

6. The following peculiarities with regard to the gender of nouns require some attention.

(*a*) Some nouns of animals, and some applicable to human beings, change their gender by merely changing their termination, as *il cerv*o, the stag, *la cerv*a, the hind; and so *colomb*o, and *colomb*a, dove, etc. etc.; *il fanciull*o, the boy, *la fanciull*a, the girl; *il cuoc*o, *la cuoc*a, cook; *il fattor*e, *la fattor*a, steward, stewardess; *uno Spagnuol*o, a Spaniard, *una Spagnuol*a, a Spanish woman; etc.

(*b*) Other similar nouns may have different genders with the same termination. Example: *il lepr*e and *la lepr*e, the hare; *il serp*e and *la serp*e, the snake; *il giovin*e, *la giovin*e, the young man, the young woman; *un Francese*, a Frenchman, *una Francese*, a Frenchwoman; etc.

(*c*) Other similar nouns, again, have irregular terminations in the feminine, as *leone*, lion, *leon*essa, lioness; *cont*e, count; *cont*essa; etc.

(*d*) Some masculine nouns in *tore* have their feminine in *trice*, as *au*tore, author, *au*trice, authoress; *tradi*tore, traitor, *tradi*trice, traitress; etc.

(*e*) Some nouns of trees, masculine, in *o*, change their termination into *a* and become feminine, to express the fruit. Ex. *il per*o, the pear-tree; *una per*a, a pear.

(*f*) Some nouns are masculine when terminated in *o*, and feminine when in *a*, as *il casat*o, or *la casat*a, the family name; and so *cioccolato*, chocolate; *cesto*, basket; *mattino*, morning; *orecchio*, ear; *scritto*, writing; *soffitto*, ceiling; all of which can equally be used as feminine, *cioccolata*, *cesta*, *mattina*, etc. etc.

(*g*) Some nouns may be used in both genders with the same termination; so *il carcere*, or *la carcere*, the prison; and so *trave*, beam; *folgore*, thunderbolt; *fine*, end; *fune*, rope; *gregge*, flock; *cenere*, ashes; *fonte*, fountain; etc.

Exercise V.

The fear of God. The spirit of the Gospel. The hand of Providence. The mist of the evening. The water of the sea. The season of Lent. From the fury of the people. On the altar of the country. In the Prophet's book.

Fear, *timore;* God, *Dio;* spirit, *spirito;* gospel, *vangelo;* hand, *mano;* Providence, *Provvidenza;* mist, *nebbia;* evening, *sera;* water, *acqua;* sea, *mare;* season, *stagione;* Lent, *Quaresima;* fury, *furore;* people, *popolo;* altar, *altare;* country, *patria;* book, *libro;* prophet, *profeta.*

The fountain of truth. The love of virtue. For the climate of the south. The mother and the child. A flock

of sheep. A peer of the realm. The lord's house. The poet's fury. A schism in the church. The king's coat-of-arms.

Fountain, *fonte;* truth, *verità;* love, *amore;* virtue, *virtù;* climate, *clima;* south, *mezzogiorno;* mother, *madre;* child, *fanciullo;* flock, *gregge;* sheep, *pecora*, pl. *pecore;* peer, *pari;* realm, *regno;* lord, *signore;* house, *casa;* poet, *poeta;* fury, *furia;* schism, *scisma;* church, *chiesa;* king, *re;* coat-of-arms, *stemma.*

The monarch's diadem. The hymn of the prophet. The election of the pope gave rise to a schism. With the song of the poet. The fan of a Spanish woman. The coquetry of a French woman.

Monarch, *monarca;* diadem, *diadema;* hymn, *inno;* election, *elezione;* pope, *papa;* song, *canto;* fan, *ventaglio:* Spanish, *Spagnuolo;* coquètry, *civetteria;* French, *Francese;* gave rise to, *produsse.*

The strength of a bear. The bear and her young. The swiftness of a hare. The hare and her young. The brother is my friend. The sister is my friend. A country-man and a country-woman. The young man and the young woman.

Strength, *forza;* bear, *orso;* her young, *i suoi orsatti;* swiftness, *prestezza;* hare, *lepre;* her young, *i suoi lepratti;* brother, *fratello;* sister, *sorella;* friend, *amico;* my, *mio*, f. *mia;* country-man, *contadino;* young man, *giovine.*

The son and the daughter. The beauty of a Circassian (woman). The boy and the girl. The nephew and the niece. The bridegroom and the bride. The baron and the baroness. The duke and the duchess. The prince and the princess. The uncle and the aunt. The grandfather and the grandmother.

Son, *figlio;* beauty, *bellezza;* Circassian, *Circasso;* boy, *ragazzo;* nephew, *nipote;* bridegroom, *sposo;* baron, *barone*, duke, *duca;* prince, *principe;* uncle, *zio;* grandfather, *nonno.*

The marquis and the marchioness. The lord and the lady. The poet and the poetess. The prophet and the prophetess. The steward and the stewardess. Give me a pear and a peach.

Marquis, *marchese;* lord, *signore;* poet, *poeta;* prophet, *profeta;* steward, *fattore;* pear-tree, *pero;* peach-tree, *pesco;* give me, *datemi.*

VI.—PLURAL OF NOUNS.

1. Masculine nouns have their plural in *i*, as *maestro*, pl. *maestri*; *poeta*, *poeti*; *splendore*, *splendori*.

2. Feminine nouns in *a* have their plural in *e*, as *sposa*, pl. *spose*.

3. Feminine nouns in *e* have their plural in *i*, as *madre*, *madri*.

(*a*) Feminine nouns in *ca* and *ga* have their plurals in *che* and *ghe*, as *monaca*, nun, *monache*; *lega*, league, *leghe*.

(*b*) Masculine nouns in *co* and *go*, of two syllables, have their plural in *chi* and *ghi*, as *bosco*, wood, *boschi*; *lago*, lake, *laghi*.

Except *porco*, pig, pl. *porci*; *Greco*, Greek, *Greci*; *Mago*, magician, *magi*, and *maghi*.

(*c*) Masculine nouns in *co* and *go*, of more than two syllables, have their plural in *chi* and *ghi* when the final syllable *co* and *go* is preceded by a consonant,—as *bifolco*, ploughman, *bifolchi*; *albergo*, inn, *alberghi*: they have their plural in *ci* and *gi* when the final syllable is preceded by a vowel, as *medico*, physician, *medici*; *teologo*, theologian, *teologi*.

The rule (*c*) is subject to frequent exceptions.

(*d*) Masculine nouns in *io* form their plural according to the common rule when the accent falls on the *i*,—as *zio*, uncle, *zii:* when the accent does not fall on the *i*, they form the plural by merely dropping the *o*,—as *spécchio*, mirror, *specchi*; *rággio*, ray, *raggi*; *librâio*, bookseller, *librai*; *artiglio*, claw, *artigli*, etc. etc.

Some of them, however, especially such as might be mistaken for other words of different meaning, change the *io* into *j*, or into *ii*,—as *tempio*, temple, *tempj*, or *tempii*, to distinguish it from *tempi*, plural of *tempo*, time. So likewise *principio*, principle, *principj*, or *principii*, to distinguish it from *principi*, princes; also *studio*, study, pl. *studj* or *studii*, etc Some write *tempî*, *principî*, *studî*.

(*e*) Feminine nouns in *cia* and *gia* follow the common rule if the accent falls upon the *i*,—as *farmacía*, apothecary's shop, *farmacíe*; *bugía*, lie, *bugíe*.

When the accent does not fall on the *i*, they generally change the *ia* into *e*, as *guáncia*, cheek, *guáncie*; *gréggia*, flock, *gregge*.

4. Some nouns have irregular plurals, as *uomo*, man, pl. *uomini*; *il Dio*, the God, *gli Dei*; *bue*, ox, *buoi*; *moglie*, wife, *mogli*, etc.

5. Nouns ending with an accented vowel, nouns in *i* and *u*, and some few in *ie* (chiefly from the fifth declension of the Latin), have the same termination for both numbers; as *il re*, the king, *i re*; *la città*, city, *le città*; *la crisi*, crisis, *le crisi*; and so *tribù*, tribe; *specie*, species, etc. etc.

6. Some masculine nouns have, besides their regular plural in *i*, another feminine termination, in *a* (derived from a plural neuter in Latin), as *il labbro*, lip, *i labbri*, and *le labbra*: so, *anello*, ring; *castello*, castle; *coltello*, knife; *filo*, thread; *fuso*, spindle; *grido*, cry; *carro*, cart; *legno*, wood; *osso*, bone; *sacco*, sack; *frutto*, fruit; *quadrello*, arrow; *vestigio*, footprint, etc. etc. The remainder of these exceptional names must be found in a good dictionary. The same remark applies to other cases in which long vocabularies would otherwise be required. A grammar is not and should not be a dictionary.

(*a*) The nouns *labbro*, lip; *ciglio*, eyelash; *braccio*, arm; *dito*, finger; *calcagno*, heel; *gomito*, elbow; *pugno*, fist; *ginocchio*, knee, etc., referring to parts of the human body, prefer the feminine termination, *labbra*, *ciglia*, *braccia*, etc.

(*b*) *Membra*, pl. of *membro*, means limbs, and refers to the body of man or animal; *membri* is also used for limbs, but more generally for members of a social body: so, *I membri del Parlamento*, the members of Parliament, not *le membra*.

(*c*) *Mura*, pl. of *muro*, wall, refers to the walls or bastions of town or castle; *muri* to the walls of house or room.

(*d*) *Corna*, pl. of *corno*, horn, is used for the horns of animals; *corni* for horns, musical instruments.

7. Some masculine nouns have only the feminine plural in *a*, as *l' uovo*, the egg, pl. *le uova*, the eggs; so, *miglio*,

mile; *paio*, pair; *staio*, bushel; *centinaio*, a hundred; *migliaio*, a thousand, etc.

8. There are nouns redundant in the singular, as *sentiero* and *sentiere*, path, pl. *sentieri*; so *cavaliero* and *cavaliere*; *scolaro* and *scolare*, etc.

Nouns redundant in both numbers, as *arma* and *arme*, weapon, pl. *arme* and *armi*; so *vesta*, dress; *dota*, dower, etc.

Nouns used only in the singular, as *mele*, honey. Nouns only used in the plural, as *nozze*, wedding; *cesoie*, scissors, etc.

Exercise VI.

The idols of the Egyptians. The gods of the Greeks. The arms of providence. The rays of the sun. Among the antiquities of Greece. The land of woods and lakes. Fools are often the victims of rogues.

Idol, *idolo;* Egyptian, *Egiziano;* God, *Dio;* Greek, *Greco;* arm, *braccio;* providence, *provvidenza*; ray, *raggio;* sun, *sole;* antiquity, *antichità;* Greece, *Grecia;* land, *paese;* wood, *bosco;* lake, *lago;* fool, *sciocco;* victim, *vittima;* rogue, *malvagio;* are often, *sono spesso.*

The tribes of the Indians. The lips of the negroes. The scissors of the Fates. Flocks of pigs and geese. Mushrooms grow in the woods. Figs do not grow in the climates of the north. A grove of oranges.

Tribe, *tribù;* Indian, *Indiano;* lip, *labbro;* negro, *negro;* scissors, *cesoie;* fate, *Parca;* flock, *greggia;* pig, *porco;* goose, *oca;* mushroom, *fungo;* fig, *fico;* climate, *clima;* north, *settentrione;* grove, *boschetto;* orange, *arancio;* grow, *nascono;* do not grow, *non nascono.*

The diadems of the monarchs. The prophets of the Hebrews. The colour of the cheeks. The shops are under the porticoes. The curtains with fringes and tassels. The rays of the planets. The peers of the realm. The years of youth.

Diadem, *diadema;* monarch, *monarca;* prophet, *profeta;* Hebrew, *Ebreo;* colour, *colore;* cheek, *guancia;* shop, *bottega;* portico, *portico;* curtain, *cortina;* fringe, *frangia;* tassel, *fiocco;* planet, *pianeta;* peer, *pari;* realm, *regno;* year, *anno;* youth, *gioventù;* are under, *sono sotto.*

The chairs of the judges. The iniquity of men's judgments. The king's enemies. Jupiter's eyebrows. Father of men and gods. In the cities of the plain. The Scythians fought with bows and arrows. The wives of the Indians. The eggs of an ostrich.

Chair, *scanno;* judge, *giudice;* iniquity, *iniquità;* judgment, *giudicio;* man, *uomo;* enemy, *nemico;* king, *re;* Jupiter, *Giove;* eyebrow, *sopracciglio;* city, *città;* plain, *pianura;* Scythian, *Scita;* bow, *arco;* arrow, *freccia;* wife, *moglie;* egg, *uovo;* ostrich, *struzzo;* fought, *combattevano.*

Two antlers on the door. On the walls of the city. Two herds of oxen. In the times of Queen Elizabeth. The temples of the gods. Coats-of-arms hang on the walls of the church. The uprightness of the king's intentions. Sappho's poems.

Antler, *corno di cervo;* door, *uscio;* wall, *muro;* herd, *mandra;* ox, *bue;* time, *tempo;* Elizabeth, *Elisabetta;* temple, *tempio;* coat-of-arms, *stemma;* church, *chiesa;* uprightness, *rettitudine;* intention, *intenzione;* poem, *poema;* Sappho, *Saffo;* hang on, *pendono da.*

The wands of the magicians. The lies of the journalists. Two kinds of mushrooms. The egg of Columbus. To the sound of horns and flutes. The members of the senate. Midas had ass's ears. The cries of the child. Ostrich eggs. He walked fifty miles in a day.

Wand, *verga;* magician, *mago;* lie, *bugia;* journalist, *giornalista;* kind, *specie;* mushroom, *fungo;* egg, *uovo;* Columbus, *Colombo;* sound, *suono;* horn, *corno;* flute, *flauto;* member, *membro;* senate, *senato;* Midas,

Mida; ass, *asino;* ear, *orecchio;* cry, *grido;* child, *fanciullo;* ostrich, *struzzo;* mile, *miglio;* fifty, *cinquanta;* day, *giorno;* had, *aveva;* he walked, *camminò.*

VII.—ADJECTIVES.

1. All adjectives end in *o* or in *e*, as *dotto*, learned; *prudente*, prudent.

2. Adjectives in *o* have four terminations: two for the singular, *dotto*, feminine *dotta*; and two for the plural, *dotti*, feminine *dotte*.

3. Adjectives in *e* have two terminations: one for the singular, *prudente*, masculine and feminine; and one for the plural, *prudenti*, masculine and feminine.

(*a*) *Pari*, equal, and *impari*, unequal, the only adjectives in *i*, have only one termination for all genders and numbers.

4. In the formation of plurals, adjectives follow the same rules as nouns.

Ex. *Uomo dotto e prudente*;—*uomini dotti e prudenti*;—learned and prudent man–men. *Donna dotta e prudente*;—*donne dotte e prudenti*;—learned and prudent woman–women. *Principe ricco e saggio*;—*principi ricchi e saggi*;—rich and wise prince–princes. *Principessa ricca e saggia*;—*Principesse ricche e sagge*;—rich and wise princess–princesses.

5. Adjectives agree with the nouns in gender and number.

Example.

il marito è pazzo,	the husband is mad.
la moglie è pazza,	the wife is mad.
padre e figlio son pazzi,	father and son are mad.
madre e figlia son pazze,	mother and daughter are mad.
marito e moglie son pazzi,	husband and wife are mad.

6. Adjectives are placed sometimes before, sometimes after, the nouns, sometimes at a great distance.

Example.

eterna infamia,
infamia eterna, } eternal disgrace.

i raggi del sole sono benefici,
benefici sono i raggi del sole, } the rays of the sun are blissful.

(*a*) However, adjectives of taste, colour, shape, etc., are generally placed after the nouns.

Ex.	*mandorle dolci,*	sweet almonds.
	un drappo nero,	a black cloth.
	la tavola rotonda,	the round table.
	acqua fresca,	cold water.
	in lingua Latina,	in the Latin tongue.

(*b*) When two or more adjectives are added to the same noun, they are generally placed after the noun.

Example.

un generale ardito ed intraprendente, a bold and enterprising general.

(These rules are often disregarded, especially in poetry.)

7. The following examples deserve attention :—

molta polve,	much dust, a great deal of dust.
molte gioie,	many jewels.
tanto orgoglio,	so much pride.
tanta viltà,	so much baseness.
tanti sciocchi,	so many fools.
tante volte,	so many times.
troppo rigore,	too much rigour.
troppa bontà,	too much goodness.
troppe ceremonie,	too many ceremonies.
poco senno,	little sense.
poca esperienza,	little experience.
pochi quattrini,	few farthings (little money).
poche difficoltà,	few difficulties.
quanto fumo !	how much smoke !
quanta canaglia !	what a numerous rabble !
quanti raggiri !	how many intrigues !
quante bugie !	how many lies !
altrettanti soldati,	as many soldiers.
altrettante signore,	as many ladies.
bello spirito,	fine wit.
bell' ingegno,	fine genius.

bel giardino,	fine garden.
begli spiriti,	fine wits.
begl' ingegni,	fine geniuses
bei giardini,	fine gardens.
grande strepito,	great noise.
grand' amore,	great love.
gran birbone,	great rogue.
grande strage,	great slaughter.
grand' anima,	great soul.
gran regina,	great queen.
buono stromento,	good instrument.
buon vino,	good wine.
San Pietro,	St. Peter.
Santo Stefano,	St. Stephen.
Sant' Andrea,	St. Andrew.
Santa Maria,	St. Mary.
Sant' Agata,	St. Agatha.

Exercise VII.

A free and independent nation. The free cities of the Rhine. Blue eyes and black hair. The faint ray of the distant stars: of the wandering comets: of the wandering planets. The study of the Italian language.

Nation, *popolo;* free, *libero;* independent, *indipendente;* city, *città;* Rhine, *Reno;* eye, *occhio;* blue, *azzurro;* hair, *capelli* (plural); black, *nero;* ray, *raggio;* faint, *fioco;* star, *stella;* distant, *remoto;* comet, *cometa;* planet, *pianeta;* wandering, *errante;* study, *studio;* language, *lingua;* Italian, *Italiano.*

The Knights of the Round Table. The father is rich. The mother is rich. Father and son are rich. Mother and daughter are rich. The father and mother are blind to the faults of the daughter. A glass of cold water.

Knight, *cavaliere;* table, *tavola;* round, *rotondo;* father, *padre;* rich, *ricco;* mother, *madre;* son, *figlio;* daughter, *figlia;* blind, *cieco;* fault, *difetto;* glass, *bicchiere;* water, *acqua;* cold, *fresco;* is, *è;* are, *sono.*

Wrapt in a green cloak. The beautiful creature in [a] white robe. I have a fine horse. A black knight on a

white steed. I have bought four beautiful horses. The church is large. A large church. St. Peter's church is a fine building.

Wrapt, *avvolto;* green, *verde;* cloak, *manto;* beautiful, *bello;* creature, *creatura;* robe, *veste;* white, *bianco;* horse, *cavallo;* fine, *bello;* steed, *destriero;* four, *quattro;* church, *chiesa;* large, *grande;* Peter, *Pietro;* building, *edifizio;* I have, *ho;* bought, *comprato.*

In Rome are many churches. So many churches! How many churches! Too many palaces! Many palaces and few churches. A great house. A great street. A fine palace. A fine tower. Many fine palaces.

Rome, *Roma;* palace, *palazzo;* house, *casa;* street, *strada;* tower, *torre;* are, *sono.*

A great talker! A great ass! The false gods of the ancient Romans. The idols of the Greeks were blind and deaf. St. Anthony is the patron of pigs. The mornings are cool. The evenings are short. The days are long. St. Lucy's street. With unequal forces. With equal pride.

Talker, *ciarlone;* ass, *asino;* false, *bugiardo;* ancient, *antico;* Roman, *Romano;* idol, *idolo;* Greek, *Greco;* deaf, *sordo;* blind, *cieco;* Anthony, *Antonio;* patron, *protettore;* pig, *porco;* morning, *mattinata;* cool, *fresco;* evening, *serata;* short, *corto;* day, *giornata;* long, *lungo;* Lucy, *Lucia;* street, *strada;* force, *forza;* unequal, *impari;* equal, *pari.*

So much baseness! So many crimes! How many traitors! Too many cooks! So great [a] hurry! How many fine horses! How many fine asses! Few books. How many pens? Little hope. So much dust! So much mud! So many times.

Baseness, *bassezza;* crime, *delitto;* traitor, *traditore;* cook, *cuoco;* hurry, *fretta;* book, *libro;* pen, *penna;* hope, *speranza;* dust, *polve;* mud, *fango;* time, *volta.*

How many times! As many times. Several times.

Several days. What pride! (how much). What misery! (how much).

Several, *parecchi;* fem. *parecchie;* day, *giorno;* pride, *orgoglio;* misery, *miseria.*

VIII.—COMPARATIVES AND SUPERLATIVES.

1. The comparison of superiority and inferiority is expressed in Italian by translating *more* by *più; less* by *meno;* and *than* by *di* or *che.* (The English conjunction *than* is generally translated by *di,* or its compounds *del, dello, della, dei, degli, delle,* when the comparison is between nouns or pronouns).

Example.

voi siete più *ricco* di *me,*	you are *richer* (more rich) *than* I.
io sono meno *ricco* di *voi,*	I am *less* rich *than* you.
vostra sorella è più *saggia* della *mia,*	your sister is *wiser than* mine.
vostra sorella è meglio *vestita* della *mia,*	your sister is *better* dressed *than* mine.
Lucia è peggio *educata* di *Maria,*	Lucy is brought up *worse than* Mary.
più *bianca* della *neve,*	*whiter than* snow.
più *ricco* di *Creso,*	*richer than* Crœsus.

(*Than* is translated by *che* when the comparison takes place between verbs, adverbs, adjectives, or sentences.)

Example.

è meglio *tardi* che *mai,*	it is *better* late *than* never.
meglio *morire* che *cedere,*	*better* die *than* yield.
piuttosto *vezzosa* che *bella,*	*rather* pretty *than* beautiful.
meno *male assolvere il reo* che *punir l' innocente,*	there is *less* harm in saving the guilty *than* in punishing the innocent.

(The following forms are peculiar to the Italian.)

Example.

più *bella* di quel che *mai fosse*,	*handsomer than* she ever was.
spende più di quello che *guadagna*, *spende* più che non *guadagna*,	he spends *more than* he he earns.

2. The comparatives of equality translate the English *as—as*, into *così—come, tanto—quanto.*

Example.

ella è tanto *modesta* quanto *è bella*, così *modesta* come *bella*, *modesta* sì com' *essa è bella*, *modesta* quanto *bella*,	she is *as* modest *as* she is beautiful.
schietto come *l' oro*,	pure *as* gold.
bianca come *la neve*,	*as* white *as* snow.
voi avete tanto *danaro* quanto *ne ho io*,	you have *as* much money *as* I have.
avete tanti *amici* quanti *ne ho io*,	you have *as* many friends *as* I have.
avete quanto *danaro vi abbisogna*,	you have *as* much money *as* you need.
troverete amici quanti *ne volete*,	you'll find *as* many friends *as* you wish.
quanto più *studia* tanto meno *impara*, più *studia* meno *impara*,	*the more* he studies *the less* he learns.

3. The superlative is either relative or absolute. The relative superlative is made by adding the article to the comparative of superiority.

Example.

il più *eloquente oratore* del *secolo*,	*the most* eloquent orator *of* the age.

il più *destro spadaccino* d' *Italia.* | *the most* skilful swordsman *in* Italy.

(In many cases, as in the last example, the English preposition *in* is translated *di* in Italian.)

4. The absolute superlative is made by translating *very* into *assai* or *molto.*

Ex. *uomo* assai *dotto,* a *very* learned man.
è molto *bella,* she is *very* beautiful.

Or else by changing the termination of the adjective into *issimo ;* in a few cases of adjectives in *re,* into *errimo.*

Example.

Uomo dott-issimo, *very* learned man, from *dotto.*
Donna bell-issima, *very* beautiful woman, from *bello,* fem. *bella.*
Consigliere sav-issimo, *very* wise counsellor, from *savio.*
Principe ricch-issimo, *very* rich prince, from *ricco.*
Versi dolc-issimi, *very* sweet verses, from *dolce,* pl. *dolci.*
Illustr-issimo *Signore, most* illustrious Sir, from *illustre.*
Poeta celeb-errimo, *very* celebrated poet, from *celebre.*

(*a*) The adjectives that take *errimo* instead of *issimo* in the superlative are all derived from a Latin in *er,*—as *celebre, salubre, acre,* etc.

5. There are some forms of comparative and superlative derived from the Latin, of very frequent occurrence.

maggiore,	greater.	*massimo,*	greatest.
minore,	less.	*minimo,*	least.
migliore,	better.	*ottimo,*	best.
peggiore,	worse.	*pessimo,*	worst.
superiore,	higher.	*supremo* or *sommo,*	highest.
inferiore,	lower.	*infimo* or *imo,*	lowest.
esteriore,	outward.	*estremo,*	outmost.
interiore,	inward.	*intimo,*	inmost.

(*a*) *Migliore* and *peggiore,* adjectives, must not be confounded with *meglio* and *peggio,* adverbs : these latter may be used as substantives :— *Le donne non iscelgono sempre* il meglio, women do not always choose *the best.*

Exercise VIII.

The mother seems younger than the daughter. The daughter is less handsome than the mother. The son is taller than the father. The father is less rich than the son. Mary is wiser than Lucy—wiser than you.

Mother, *madre;* daughter, *figlia;* young, *giovine;* handsome, *bello;* son, *figlio;* rich, *ricco;* tall, *grande;* father, *padre;* Mary, *Maria;* wise, *saggio;* Lucy, *Lucia;* you, *voi;* seems, *pare;* is, *è.*

You are as wise as your sister. Your sister is as silly as your mother. She is as silly as she is handsome. The brother is as rich as the sister. The sister is richer than the brother. She is as good as she is fair.

Sister, *sorella;* silly, *sciocco;* brother, *fratello;* good, *buono;* your, *vostro,* fem. *vostra;* you are, *siete;* she, *ella.*

He is rather learned than witty. She is rather infirm than aged. He is rather rash than brave. He is brave as a lion. She is as white as snow. Whiter than snow. Braver than a lion. Silent as the grave.

Learned, *dotto;* witty, *ingegnoso;* infirm, *infermo;* aged, *attempato;* rash, *temerario;* brave, *valoroso;* brave, *ardito;* lion, *leone;* white, *bianco;* snow, *neve;* silent, *muto;* grave, *tomba.*

Better to-day than to-morrow. Man is stronger than woman. Better an egg to-day than a hen to-morrow. Better weep with the righteous than exult with the iniquitous. Better perish at once than always tremble. Death sooner than disgrace.

To-day, *oggi;* to-morrow, *domani;* man, *uomo;* woman, *donna;* strong, *forte;* egg, *uovo;* hen, *gallina;* to weep, *piangere;* righteous, *giusto* (pl.); to exult, *esultare;* iniquitous, *iniquo* (pl.); to perish, *perire;* at once, *una volta;* to tremble, *tremare;* always, *sempre;* death, *morte;* disgrace, *disonore.*

The Arabian horses are better than the English. The

earth is larger than the moon. The usurer is worse than the thief. Virtue is the highest happiness. No worse enemy than a faithless friend. The white horse is the best.

Arabian horse, *cavallo Arabo;* English, *Inglese;* earth, *terra;* moon, *luna;* usurer, *usuraio;* thief, *ladro;* virtue, *virtù;* happiness, *bene;* no worse, *nessun peggiore;* enemy, *nemico;* friend, *amico;* faithless, *infido.*

She is very handsome. He is very wise. The English climate is very healthy. England is the freest country in the world. He is the most profound philosopher of the age. The most profound thinker in Germany. The greatest talker.

Handsome, *bello;* wise, *saggio;* English climate, *clima Inglese;* healthy, *salubre;* England, *Inghilterra;* country, *paese;* free, *libero;* world, *mondo;* profound, *profondo;* philosopher, *filosofo;* age, *secolo;* thinker, *pensatore;* Germany, *Germania;* talker, *ciarlone.*

Your most humble servant. A very pretty girl. With the greatest pleasure. With the least trouble. A man of [an] excellent (best) heart. Two most beautiful horses. Very accomplished gentlemen. Very profound scholars. The finest horse.

Servant, *servo;* humble, *umile;* girl, *ragazza;* pretty, *vezzoso;* pleasure, *piacere;* trouble, *disturbo;* heart, *cuore;* gentleman, *signore;* accomplished, *compito;* scholar, *letterato;* fine, beautiful, *bello.*

IX.—AUGMENTATIVES AND DIMINUTIVES.

1. Italian nouns, adjectives, and sometimes even adverbs, receive some modifications known under the appellation of *augmentatives* and *diminutives.*

These are extremely arbitrary, both as to forms and meanings, sometimes also about genders: they are not amenable to positive rules, and should be used sparingly.

The following examples comprehend the most common and regular forms:—

Examples.

Libro, book; *libr*one, large book; *libr*accio, great ugly book; *libr*etto, *libr*iccino, little book; *lib*ercolo, *libr*icciatolo, worthless book, pamphlet.

Uomo, man; *om*etto, mannikin; *om*icciatolo, contemptible little man.

Donna, woman; *donn*one (masc.), large woman; *donn*etta, *donn*icciuola, little woman, gossiping woman; *donn*accia, bad woman.

Casa, house; *cas*one (masc.), big house; *cas*accia, great ugly house; *cas*etta, *cas*uccia, *cas*ino (masc.), little house, cottage; *cas*ipola, small rickety house.

Camera, room; *camer*ino (masc.), *camer*etta, *camer*uccia, little room.

Strada, street or road; *strad*one (masc.), wide road; *strad*accia, bad road; *strad*etta, *strad*icciuola, lane, path, alley.

Uccello, bird; *uccell*ino, *uccell*etto, *uccell*uccio, *uccell*inetto, pretty little bird.

Contadino, countryman; *contadin*ello, country lad; *contadin*otto, young, stout-built countryman.

Tavola, table; *tavol*ino (masc.), small table, card or writing table, side table.

Gente, people; *gent*ame (masc.), mob; *gent*aglia, rabble.

Bambino, infant; *bambin*ello. *Orto*, garden; *ort*icello.

Signore, *signora*, gentleman, lady; *signor*ino, *signor*ina.

Conte, count; *cont*ino. *Principe*, prince; *princip*ino.

Padrone, *padrona*, master, mistress; *padron*cino, *padron*cina.

Riso, laugh; *ris*olino, pretty laugh. *Sorriso*, smile; *sorris*etto, sweet smile.

Bastone, stick; *baston*cello. *Capanna*, cottage; *capann*uccia.

Albero, tree; *arb*oscello, graceful young tree, shrub.

Fiore, flower; *fior*etto, *fior*ellino, floweret, sweet flower.

Bestia, animal; *best*ione (masc.), *best*iaccia, great ugly beast; *best*iuola, *best*iolina, *best*iolino (masc.), graceful little animal.

Vento, wind; *vent*icello, light wind. *Aura*, breeze; *aur*etta, light breeze.

Vecchio, *vecchia*, old man, old woman; *vecchi*erello, *vecchi*erella, pleasant little old man or woman.

Pazzo, fool; *pazz*accio, disagreeable fool; *pazz*erello, pleasant fool.

Angelo, angel; *angiol*etto, *angiol*ino, dear angel.

Maria, Mary; *Mariuccia*, dear little Mary. *Carlo*, Charles; *Carlino*, *Carluccio*, Charley. *Elisabetta*, Elizabeth; *Betta*, *Bettina*, Bessy and Bess. *Pietro*, Peter; *Pietraccio*, villanous Peter, etc.

Sciocco, fool, foolish; *sciocc*one, *sciocc*herello.

Grasso, stout; *grass*accio, fat; *grass*otto, *grass*occio, plump.

Tenero, soft; *tener*ello, very young and tender.

Grande, tall; *grand*icello. *Lungo*, long; *lungh*etto.

Caro, dear; *car*ino. *Piccolo*, small; *piccol*etto, tiny.

*Vis*ino *grazios*etto (from *viso grazioso*), charming little face.

*Nav*icella *piccol*etta (*nave piccola*), pretty tiny boat.

*Bambin*etto *tener*ello (*bambino tenero*), very tender darling infant.

Rosso, red; *ross*iccio, ruddy; *ross*astro, reddish.

Verde, green; *verd*igno, *verd*astro, greenish.

Giallo, yellow; *giall*ognolo, yellowish.

Bruno, brown; *brun*azzo, dingy brown.

Bene, well; *ben*ino, pretty well; *ben*one, quite well.

2. The use of the above forms, although conveying in themselves the augmentative or diminutive meaning, do

not exclude additional adjectives to the same effect: we can say thus, without fear of redundance.

Example.

*mirate quel piccolo cagn*olino! look at that dear little dog!
*che grazioso uccell*etto! what a pretty, pretty bird!

Exercise IX.

The little-old-man resting on his little-stick. The young-peasant-girl, with her little-pet-lambs. This girl is a little-angel. What a pretty-little-face! Poor-little-creature! dear little-bird! sweet little-flower!

Old man, *vecchio;* stick, *bastone;* peasant girl, *contadina;* lamb, *agnello;* girl, *ragazza;* angel, *angelo;* face, *viso;* pretty, *leggiadro;* creature, *creatura;* poor, *povero;* bird, *uccello;* flower, *fiore;* dear, *caro;* sweet, *dolce;* resting on his, *appoggiato al suo;* with her, *coi suoi;* this, *questa;* what, *che.*

You have bought a house: a big-house. The prince has bought a palace: a low-strong-built-palace. A bad-old-hat. A large ugly-book. You have done very well. Come rather quick. Read rather-slowly.

House, *casa;* prince, *principe;* palace, *palazzo* (low-strong-built to be expressed by diminutive in *otto*); hat, *cappello;* old, *vecchio;* book, *libro;* large, *grande;* well, *bene;* quick, *presto;* slowly, *adagio;* you have, *avete;* has, *ha;* bought, *comprato;* you have done, *avete fatto;* come, *venite;* read, *leggete.*

You are a great-fool. She is a dear-little-fool. Stop a little-moment. Where have you bought that pretty-little-love-of-a-dog? A little-rivulet watered the sweet-little-meadows. See that nice-little-cottage. Where have you bought that great-ugly-horse?

Fool, *sciocco,* or *pazzo;* moment, *momento;* dog, *cane;* that, *quel;* rivulet, *ruscello;* pretty, *grazioso;* cottage, *capanna;* that, *quella;* meadow, *prato;* sweet, *dolce;* nice, *leggiadro;* you are, *siete;* she is, *è;* stop, *fer-*

matevi; where have you bought? *dove avete comprato?* watered, *bagnava;* see, *vedete.*

The breeze whispers among the boughs of the little-grove. Let us rest on the tender young-grass.

Breeze, *aura;* bough, *ramo;* grove, *bosco;* grass, *erba;* tender, *tenera;* whispers, *susurra;* let us rest, *riposiamoci.*

X.—NUMERAL ADJECTIVES.

1. The cardinal numbers are: —

0, *zero.*	13, *tredici.*	80, *ottanta.*
1, *uno.*	14, *quattordici.*	90, *novanta.*
2, *due.*	15, *quindici.*	100, *cento.*
3, *tre,*	16, *sedici.*	200, *duecento* or
4, *quattro.*	17, *diciassette.*	*dugento.*
5, *cinque.*	18, *diciotto.*	300, *trecento,* etc.
6, *sei.*	19, *diciannove.*	1000, *mille.*
7, *sette.*	20, *venti.*	2000, *due mila,*
8, *otto.*	30, *trenta.*	3000, *tre mila.*
9, *nove.*	40, *quaranta.*	100,000, *cento mila,*
10, *dieci.*	50, *cinquanta.*	etc. etc.
11, *undici,*	60, *sessanta.*	1,000,000, *un milione,*
12, *dodici.*	70, *settanta.*	etc.

2. Cardinal numbers are indeclinable.

(*a*) Except *uno*, feminine *una;* as *uno scudo*, a crown; *una lira*, a pound; and *mille*, one thousand; *due mila*, two thousand; *dieci mila*, ten thousand, etc.; also, *milione*, pl. *milioni; bilione*, etc.

(*b*) 21, 31, 41, 51, etc., are written *vent' uno, trent' uno*, etc., and the nouns united with them can be used either in the plural or the singular. Ex. *vent' uno scudo, vent' uno scudi*, or *scudi vent' uno*, twenty-one crowns.

3. The ordinal numbers are:—

1st *primo,* 11th *undecimo, undicesimo,* or *decimo primo.*

2nd *secondo.*	12th *duodecimo, dodicesimo,* or *decimo secondo.*
3rd *terzo.*	
4th *quarto.*	13th *tredicesimo,* or *decimo terzo.*
5th *quinto.*	14th *quattordicesimo,* or *decimo quarto.*
6th *sesto.*	15th *quindicesimo,* or *decimo quinto,* etc.
7th *settimo.*	20th *ventesimo,* or *vigesimo.*
8th *ottavo.*	21st *ventunesimo,* or *ventesimo primo.*
9th *nono.*	22nd *ventiduesimo,* or *ventesimo secondo.*
10th *decimo.*	etc.
	100th *centesimo;* 1000th *millesimo,* etc.

4. Ordinal numbers have four terminations like adjectives in *o*.

Ex. *il primo scudo,* the first crown.
la prima volta, the first time.
i primi studi, the first studies.
le prime lettere, the first letters.

5. Numeral substantives are :—

un mezzo, fem. *una mezza,* one-half.
la metà, the half, pl. *le due metà,* both halves.
un paio, pl. *le paia,* pair.
una decina, *le decine,* half-a-score, or 10.
una dozzina, *le dozzine,* a dozen.
una ventina, *le ventine,* a score,
so *trentina, quarantina, cinquantina,* etc., a set of 30, 40, 50.
un centinaio, pl. *le centinaia,* a hundred.
un migliaio, *le migliaia,* a thousand.
un milione, *i milioni,* a million.
un bilione, *i bilioni,* a billion, etc.

6. The following peculiarities respecting numbers are of importance.

Examples.

L' anno mille ottocento *cinquant' uno* — never diciotto cento, etc.

the year *one thousand eight hundred,* or eighteen hundred and fifty-one,

Tasso morì nel *mille cinque cento novanta cinque*, or nell' anno mille, etc.	Tasso died *in* fifteen hundred ninety-five, or *in the year*, etc.
quanti ne *abbiamo del mese?* ai quanti *siamo del mese?*	*what is the day* of the month?
oggi è il primo,	to-day is *the first.*
oggi è il dieci, ne *abbiamo* dieci,	to-day is *the tenth.*
Napoleone morì il cinque *Maggio, mille ottocento vent' uno,*	Napoleon died on *the fifth of* May, eighteen hundred twenty-one.
Londra, il 10 Marzo, *or*, ai 10 Marzo, *or*, li 10 Marzo,	London, *March 10th.*
che ora *è?*	what o'clock is it?
è l'una,	it is *one o'clock.*
sono le quattro,	it is *four o'clock.*
sono le dieci e mezza, *sono* le dieci e mezzo,	it is half-past ten.
mezzogiorno e un quarto,	a quarter past twelve (at noon).
mezzogiorno e mezzo,	half-past twelve (at noon).
le sei meno un quarto,	a quarter to six.
le tre meno venti,	twenty minutes before three.
entro un' ora,	in an hour.
fra tre giorni,	within three days.
da oggi a otto,	this day a week.
da domani a quindici,	to-morrow a fortnight.
sei mesi fa,	six months ago.
da quì a sei mesi,	six months hence.
da sei mesi in qua,	for the last six months.
due via due fa quattro,	twice two is four.
sei via sei trentasei,	six times six thirty-six.
Luigi Decimo Ottavo,	Louis *the* Eighteenth.
libro primo: capitolo quinto,	book *the* first, chapter *the* fifth.

gli autori del secolo decimo quarto,
gli autori del trecento, } the authors of the fourteenth century.

Tasso fioriva nel secolo decimo sesto,
or, *nel* cinquecento, } Tasso flourished in the sixteenth century.

Exercise X.

Seven children. Four boys and three girls. A boy and a girl. Forty-one pounds. Six thousand combatants. Four thousand five hundred foot, and fifteen hundred horse. Washington died in seventeen hundred and ninety-nine.

Child, *figlio;* boy, *maschio;* girl, *femmina;* pound, *lira;* combatant, *combattente;* foot, *fanti;* horse, *cavalli;* died, *morì.*

Francis the First. Charles the Fifth. On the twenty-fourth of February. Petrarch flourished towards the middle of the fourteenth century. She died at five o'clock. The morning, at a quarter to eleven. It is half-past eleven. Galileo flourished in the sixteenth century.

Francis, *Francesco;* Charles, *Carlo;* February, *Febbraio;* towards, *verso;* Petrarch, *Petrarca;* middle, *metà;* fourteenth and sixteenth century (in two manners); morning, *mattina;* flourished, *fioriva.*

Tasso, canto thirteenth, stanza twenty-fourth. He returned with [a] few hundreds of men. He brought me [a] few dozens of gloves. Two pair of boots. He has lost several thousands of pounds. I am satisfied with one half. She died nine months ago.

Few, *poco,* adject., or *alcuno;* glove, *guanto;* boot, *stivale;* pound, *lira;* month, *mese;* several, *parecchi,* adject.; returned, *tornò;* he brought me, *mi portò;* he has lost, *ha perduto;* I am satisfied with, *mi contento di.*

Come again in six weeks. This day a fortnight. Six weeks from this. For the last three weeks. Within nine

months. Seven times seven is forty-nine. He comes within the year. He comes this day a week. He comes a month from this, or a month hence.

Year, *anno;* week, *settimana;* come again, *tornate;* he comes, *viene.*

XI.—PERSONAL PRONOUNS.

1. Personal pronouns are declined with prepositions.

Nom.	*io,*	I.	*noi,*	we.
Gen.	*di me,*	of me.	*di noi,*	of us.
Dat.	*a me,*	to me.	*a noi,*	to us.
Acc.	*me,*	me.	*noi,*	us.
Abl.	*da me,*	from me.	*da noi,*	from us.
	in me,	in me.	*in noi,*	in us.
	con me,	with me.	*con noi,*	with us.
	etc.		etc.	
Nom.	*tu,*	thou.	*voi,*	you.
Gen.	*di te,*	of thee.	*di voi,*	of you.
Dat.	*a te,*	to thee.	*a voi,*	to you.
Acc.	*te,*	thee.	*voi,*	you.
Abl.	*da te,*	from thee.	*da voi,*	from you.
	etc.		etc.	

No Nominative.

Gen. *di se,* of himself, of herself, of itself, of themselves.
Dat. *a se,* to himself, to herself, etc.
Acc. *se,* himself, herself, etc.
Abl. *da se,* from himself, etc.
etc.

(*a*) *I'* may be used instead of *io.*
(*b*) *Meco, teco, seco,* are used instead of *con me, con te, con se.*

Nom.	*egli,*	he	*eglino,*	they (mas.).
Gen.	*di lui,*	of him.	*di loro,*	of them.

Dat.	*a lui,*	to him.	*a loro,*	to them.
Acc.	*lui,*	him.	*loro,*	them.
Abl.	*da lui,*	from him.	*da loro,*	from them.
	etc.		etc.	
Nom.	*ella,*	she.	*elleno,*	they (fem.).
Gen.	*di lei,*	of her.	*di loro,*	of them.
Dat.	*a lei,*	to her.	*a loro,*	to them.
Acc.	*lei,*	her.	*loro,*	them.
Abl.	*da lei,*	from her.	*da loro,*	from them.
	etc.		etc.	

(*a*) *Ei* or *E'* may be used instead of *egli* and *eglino.*

2. The nominative pronouns, *io, noi, tu, voi, egli, eglino ella, elleno,* may be, and are generally, omitted before the verbs.

Ex. *Penso a' miei figli,* *I* think of my children.
Piange il marito, *She* mourns for her husband.

(*a*) Except (i.) when they are required to distinguish the person of the verb.

Ex. *s'* io avessi *danaro,* if I had money,
se tu avessi *pazienza,* if thou hadst patience

(ii.)—To avoid ambiguity.

Ex. *i due sposi tacquero alquanto :* the two betrothed were silent for
alfine ella *parlò,* a while : at length she spoke.

(iii.)—When a peculiar stress or emphasis is laid on the pronoun.

Ex. *comando* io, it is *I* who command.
io *son che prego,* it is *I* who beg.
lo strepito lo fate voi, it is *you* who make a row.

(iv.)—When two or more pronouns are placed in contrast or antithesis.

Ex. *se non volete cantar* voi, if *you* do not wish to sing,
canterò io, *I* shall.

(v.)—Whenever the pronoun is required by taste or euphony.

Examples.

t' ama ella *tanto?* does *she* love thee so much?
ti sei tu *fatto schiavo or così!* hast *thou* become so great a slave?

(*b*) In all cases the repetition of the same pronoun is to be avoided.

io pranzo quando posso,
pranzo quando io posso,
pranzo quando posso, } I dine when I can.
but never
io pranzo quando io posso,

Exercise XI.

She weeps; I laugh; she weeps and I laugh. Does she weep? He rides; I walk. I walk and he rides; I come with thee. Go with her. Breakfast with us. Dine with me. He always speaks of himself. You shall not have it from me. Do not put your trust in her. She always speaks of herself.

Weeps, or does weep, *piange;* laugh, *rido;* rides, *va a cavallo;* walk, *vo a piedi;* come, *vengo;* go, *andate;* breakfast, *fate colezione;* dine, *pranzate;* always speaks, *parla sempre;* shall not have it, *non l' avrete;* do not put your trust, *non abbiate fede.*

I am poorer than you. You are richer than I. They are prouder than he. He is more unhappy than thou. I congratulate you. I have not forgotten thee. Have pity on him. He has no pity on her. She has no pity on us. I shall not go without them. I shall not go without her.

Poor, *povero;* rich, *ricco;* proud, *superbo;* unhappy, *infelice;* congratulate, *mi congratulo con;* have not forgotten, *non mi son dimenticato di;* have pity on, *abbi pietà di*; has no pity on, *non ha pietà di;* shall not go, *non andrò*; without, *senza di.*

I shall help him as much as I can. I helped him when I was able. I would help him, if I could. You understand Italian, but I do not understand it. Do you also make game of us? Does she also laugh at me? Is it you who break the glasses? Is it thou who weepest? Who are they? Who is she? Who art thou?

I shall help him, *lo aiuterò;* as much as, *quanto;* can, *posso;* helped him, *lo aiutava;* when, *quando;* I was able, *poteva;* I would help him, *lo aiuterei;* if, *se;* could, *potessi;* you understand, *capite*; Italian, *l' Italiano;* but, *ma;* I do not understand it, *non lo capisco;* do you make game? *vi prendete gioco?* also, *anche;* does she laugh at? *si ride di?* is it you? *siete?* who break, *che rompete;* glass, *bicchiere;* is it thou? *sei?* who

weepest, *che piangi ;* who are, *chi sono ?* who is, *chi è ?* who art ? *chi sei ?*

XII.—CONJUNCTIVE PRONOUNS.

1. Besides their regular declension with prepositions, the pronouns have peculiar forms, which are called *conjunctive* pronouns. These are:

Dat. & A.	*mi*, (instead of *a me, me*)		to me, me, to myself, myself.
	ti, „	(*a te, te*)	to thee, thee, to thyself, thyself.
	ci, or *ne*, „	(*a noi, noi*)	to us, us, to ourselves, ourselves.
	vi, „	(*a voi, voi*)	to you, you, to yourselves, yourselves.
	si, „	(*a se, se*)	to himself, himself, to herself, herself, etc.
Dat. only.	*gli*, „	(*a lui*)	to him, to it, (dat. m. sg.)
	le, „	(*a lei*)	to her, to it, (dat. f. sing.)
Acc. only.	*lo* or *il*, „	(*lui*)	him, it, (acc. mas. sing.)
	la, „	(*lei*)	her, it, (acc. fem. sing.)
	gli, or *li* „	(*loro*)	them, (acc. mas. plur.)
	le, „	(*loro*)	them, (acc. fem. plur.)

Gen. *ne*, of him, of her, of them, of it, some, any, hence (French *en*).

Dat. *ci*, or *vi*, to it, there (French *y*).

Dat. *loro*, to them, used without preposition, instead of *a loro*.

(*a*) The pronouns *lo, la, gli, le*, are subject to the same elisions as the same words as articles.

(*b*) The pronouns *mi, ti, si, vi, ne*, may also suffer elision before any vowel; *ci* only before *i*.

2. The conjunctive pronouns are sometimes placed after the verb, and joined to it; sometimes placed before it.

Example.

ascoltate-mi *quando* vi *parlo*, listen to *me* when I speak *to you.*

(*a*) They are generally joined to the verb after it.

(i.) —After the infinitive.

Ex. *vorrei* parlar-vi, I wish to speak *to you.*

(ii.) After the Gerund.

Ex. vedendo-lo, seeing *him.*
avendo-lo *veduto*, having seen *him.*

(iii.)—After the participle past, when used without an auxiliary.

Ex. veduto-lo (*i. e. avendolo veduto*), having seen *him.*

(iv.)—After the 2nd person sing. and the 1st and 2nd plur. of the imperative, when used affirmatively.

Ex. parla-gli, speak (thou) *to him.*
parliamo-gli, let us speak *to him.*
parlate-gli, speak (you) *to him.*

(*b*) In all other moods and tenses, in the 3rd person sing. and plur. of the imperative, and in the whole of the imperative *when used negatively*, the pronoun is *usually*, though *not necessarily*, placed before the verb.

Examples.

egli mi *ascolta quando io* gli *parlo*, he listens *to me* when I speak *to him.*
la *vedete?* do you see *her?*
non mi *parlate*, do not speak *to me.*
non ne *parliamo*, let us not talk *about it.*
mi *risponda quando io* lo *interrogo*, let him answer *me* when I question *him.*

(*c*) The junction of the pronoun with the verb may give rise to

(i.)—The suppression of the last vowel or syllable of the verb, especially in the infinitive.

Examples.

non voglio veder-lo (vedere-lo), I do not wish to *see him.*
non posso scior-lo (sciorre-lo), I cannot *untie it.*

(ii.)—To some reduplication of the consonant of the pronoun, when the verb terminates with an accented vowel.

Examples.

dimmi il vero (dì-mi), tell *me* the truth.
diemmela (me-la-diè *or* diè-me-la), he gave *it to me.*

3. The conjunctive pronoun *is*, and *must be generally*, preferred to the regular declension.

(*d*) Unless,—(i.)—a peculiar stress is laid upon the pronoun.

Ex. *parlo* a voi, it is *to you* I speak.

(ii.)—Two or more pronouns are dependent on the same verb, especially if they be placed in contrast or antithesis.

Examples.

parlo a lui *e* a lei,	I speak *to him* and *to her*.
parlo a lui *non* a lei,	I speak *to him*, not *to her*.
chiamo lui *e non* lei,	I call *him*, and not *her*.
noi *inviteremo* loro *quando* eglino *avranno invitato* noi,	*we* shall ask *them* when *they* shall have asked *us*.
Gl' *inviteremo quando* ci *avranno invitati*,	

Exercise XII.

Speak to me. Speak to him. Speak to me, not to him. Do you speak *to me?* Do you speak to me, or to him? Speak to her. Speak to her about (of) it. Do not speak to me about it. Speak to us. Speak to us about it.

Speak, or do speak, *parlate;* do not speak, *non parlate.*

I esteem him. I esteem her. I esteem him and her. I see you. You see me. You see me, but I do not see you. Do you see the tower? I see it. Do you see the castle? I see it. Do you see me? Do you see her? Do you see us? Do you see him?

Tower, *torre;* castle, *castello;* I esteem, *stimo;* I see, *vedo;* you see, or do you see? *vedete.*

I had two sons. I have lost them. I had two daughters. I have married them. I will punish you. I will punish you for (of) it. I will punish him. God will punish her. God will punish us. Do not punish me. Do not punish us. Punish him and not her.

Son, *figlio;* daughter, *figlia;* God, *Dio;* I had, *aveva;* I have lost, *ho perduti;* I have married, *ho maritate;* I will punish, *punirò;* will punish, *punirà;* punish, *punite;* do not punish, *non punite.*

Do you see those trees? I see them. I do not see them. I cannot see them. Do you see those houses? I do not see them. I do not see any (of them). Do you see any ship? I do not see any (of them). Have you many children? I have none (not any of them).

Those trees, *quegli alberi;* those houses, *quelle case;* any ship, *alcuna nave;* many children, *molti figli;* do you see, *vedete?* I see, *vedo;* I do not see, *non vedo;* I cannot see, *non posso vedere; I do not see any of them,* turn, I *not of them see any;* any, *alcuna;* have you, *avete?* I have, *ho. I have none,* turn, *I not of them have any;* any, *alcuno.*

Bring (to) me the book. Give (to) her the pen. Will you have the book? Take it. Will you have the pen? Ask for it, but do not take it. Will you have the book and the pen? Take them. Do you see the gentlemen? I see them. Do you see the ladies? I see them. Do you see the ladies and the gentlemen? I see them. Do you see the lady? I see her. Do you see the lady and the gentleman? I see them.

Book, *libro;* pen, *penna;* gentleman, *signore;* lady, *signora;* give, *date;* bring, *portate;* will you have, *volete?* take, *prendete;* ask for, *domandate;* do not take, *non prendete.*

XIII.—DOUBLE CONJUNCTIVE PRONOUNS.

1. Two conjunctive pronouns are often joined together, and this junction gives rise to some change in their termination.

2. The conjunctive pronouns *mi, ti, ci, vi, si,* change their *i* into *e,* before *lo, la, gli, le, ne.*

Ex. ve la *presento* (vi-la), I introduce *her to you.*
te lo *concedo* (ti-lo), I grant *it to thee.*
me ne *parlaste* (mi-ne), you spoke *of it to me.*

3. The conjunctive pronouns *gli* (to him), and *le* (to her), are both changed into *glie* before *lo, la, li, le, ne.*

Examples.

gliene *parlo* { gli-ne, / le-ne, } I speak *to him of it.* / I speak *to her of it.*

glieli *raccomando* { gli-li, / le-li, } I recommend *them* (m.) to him. / I recommend *them* (m.) to her.

gliele *raccomando* { gli-le, / le-le, } I recommend *them* (f.) *to him.* / I recommend *them* (f.) *to her.*

(*a*) In all these junctions of pronouns,

(i.)—The first person takes precedence of the second, the second of the third.

Examples.

egli mi ti *raccomanda,* he recommends *thee to me* (*to me thee*).

io te lo *raccomando,* I recommend *him to thee* (*to thee him*).

(ii.)—The dative takes precedence of the accusative.

Ex. glielo *raccomando,* I recommend *him to her* (*to her him*).

gliela *raccomando,* I recommend *her to him* (*to him her*).

4. Attention should be paid to the following forms of pronouns added to the reflected verbs.

Mi *vanto,* I boast (*myself*); me ne *vanto,* I boast (*myself*) *of it.*

Ti *penti,* thou repentest (*thyself*); te ne *penti,* thou repentest (*thyself of it*).

Si *lagna,* he complains (*himself*); se ne *lagna,* he complains (*himself of it*).

Ci *lusinghiamo,* we flatter (*ourselves*); ce ne *lusinghiamo,* we flatter (*ourselves of it*).

Vi *dolete,* you complain (*yourselves*); ve ne *dolete,* you complain (yourselves of it).

Si *lodano,* they praise *themselves;* se ne *lodano,* they praise (themselves for it).

*Non posso vantar*mi, I cannot boast (*myself*).

*Non vuol pentir*si, he will not repent (*himself*).

*Non avete ragione di vantar*vene, you have no reason to boast (*yourselves of it*).

*Vanta*ti, boast (*thyself*); *vanta*tene, boast (*thyself of it*).

Si *vanti,* let him boast (*himself*); se ne *vanti,* let him boast (*himself of it*).

*Vantiamo*ci, let us boast (*ourselves*); *non* ci *vantiamo,* let us not boast (*ourselves*).

*Vantate*vene, boast (*yourselves of it*); *non* ve ne *vantate,* do not boast (*yourselves of it*).

Mi *avvezzo,* I accustom *myself;* mi ci *avvezzo,* I accustom (*myself to it*).

me thy opinion about (of) it. Tell [you] (to) me your opinion about it. Tell it to me.

Give [thou], *dà;* tell [thou], *dì;* truth, *vero;* what I told, *ciò che dissi;* speak, *parla;* thy opinion, *il tuo parere;* tell [you], *dite;* your opinion, *il vostro parere.*

Give (to) her the book. Give (to) him the book. Do not give him the book. Do not give it to her. Do not give it to her, but to him. Give us some wine. Give me some bread. Give me some. Give her some. Give some to him also.

Give [thou], *dà;* give [you], *date;* do not give [thou], *non dare;* do not give [you], *non date;* wine, *vino;* bread, *pane; some*, turn, *of it; to him also*, turn, *also to him;* also, *anche.*

Have you some bread? Give us some. Hast thou some nuts? Give us some. Have you a newspaper? Give it to him. Hast thou an apple? Give it to her. Have you many horses? Give us one. Hast thou many pens? Give us one.

Nuts, *noci;* newspaper, *giornale;* apple, *mela;* many horses, *molti cavalli; give us one*, turn, *give us of them one;* one, *uno;* many pens, *molte penne;* one, *una.*

I consent to it. I cannot consent to it. Have you some paper? I have not any. Will you have some? I do not want any. Think of (to) it. I think of it. Let them think of it. Let us not think of it.

I consent, *acconsento;* I cannot consent, *non posso acconsentire;* paper, *carta;* I have not, *non ho; any*, turn, *of it;* will you have, *volete? some*, turn, *of it;* I do not want, *non voglio; think of it*, turn, *think to it;* think [thou], *pensa;* think [you], *pensate;* I think, *penso;* I must think, *debbo pensare;* do not think [you], *non pensate;* let us think, *pensiamo;* let them think, *pensino.*

She esteems him. He esteems her. He esteems her.

but she does not esteem him. They invited us. We must invite them. We will invite her. We will invite her and him. Invite her if she invites you.

Esteems, *stima;* does not esteem, *non istima;* they invited, *invitarono;* we must invite, *dobbiamo invitare;* we will invite, *inviteremo;* invite, *invitate;* she invites, *invita.*

I complain (myself). I complain of it. I dare not complain of it. She repents (herself) of it. She will not repent. We do not repent (ourselves) of it. Let us repent (ourselves). Let us not repent (ourselves) of it.

I complain, *lagno;* dare complain, *oso lagnare;* she repents, *pente;* will not repent, *non vuol pentire;* we do not repent, *non pentiamo;* let us repent, *pentiamo;* let us not repent, *non pentiamo* (reflective verbs throughout).

Repent (thyself). Repent (yourselves). Let them repent (themselves). I force myself. I force myself to it. You cannot force me to it. Do not force me to it. She forces herself. Do not force him. Do not force him to it. Do not force us to it.

Repent, *penti*, plur. *pentite;* let them repent, *pentano;* I force, *sforzo;* you cannot force, *non potete sforzare;* do not force, *non forzate;* she forces, *sforza.*

XIV.—POSSESSIVE PRONOUNS.

1. Possessive Pronouns are used with articles.

il mio,	*la mia,*	*i miei,*	*le mie,*	my, mine.
il tuo,	*la tua,*	*i tuoi,*	*le tue,*	thy, thine.
il suo,	*la sua,*	*i suoi,*	*le sue,*	his, her, hers, its.
il nostro,	*la nostra,*	*i nostri,*	*le nostre,*	our, ours.
il vostro,	*la vostra,*	*i vostri,*	*le vostre,*	your, yours.
il loro,	*la loro,*	*i loro,*	*le loro,*	their, theirs.

(*a*) *Loro* is merely the personal pronoun *di loro* (of them) used without preposition.

2. The article is generally omitted when these pronouns are added to nouns of kindred[1] or dignity in the singular.

Example.

parlatene a *vostro zio,*	speak of it to your uncle.
l' ho dato a *mia cugina,*	I have given it to my cousin.
fu presentata a *Sua Maestà,*	she was introduced to His or Her Majesty.
obbligatissimo a *vostra Eccellenza,*	much obliged to your Excellency.

3. The article is, however, used even with such nouns.

I. In the plural number.

Example.

l' ho dato alle *mie cugine,*	I have given it to my cousins.

II. When the noun precedes the pronoun.

Example.

obbligatissimo all' *Eccellenza vostra,*	much obliged to your Excellency.

III. Or when an adjective occurs between the pronoun and the noun.

Example.

l' ho dato alla *mia cara cugina,*	I have given it to my dear cousin.
l' ho ricevuto dalla mia sorellina,	I have received it from my little sister.

IV. The pronoun *loro* invariably bears the article.

Example.

il loro padre è in villa,	their father is in the country.

(*b*) The article is omitted when the pronoun is added to a noun, taken in an indefinite, partitive, or limited sense.

[1] This only applies to the most direct and familiar nouns of kindred, as *padre, madre, fratello, sorella, moglie,* etc.; for the rest we say, il *mio genitore,* my father; la *mia consorte,* my wife; il *tuo germano,* thy brother, etc.

Example.

quel cavallo è mio,	That horse is mine—that is, belongs to me, one of my horses.
quel cavallo è il *mio*,	That is *my* horse — that is, *the* horse that belongs to me.
questi sono miei figli,	These are *my* children — that is, *some* of my children.
questi sono i *miei figli*,	These are *my* children — that is, *all my* children, or *those* of my children you know of, or allusion has been made to.

(*c*) The following examples deserve particular attention.

l' ho dato ad un mio *amico*,	I have given it to *a* friend *of mine*.
non *è* mio *amico*,	he is *no* friend *of mine*.
fate a modo mio,	do (after *my own* way) as I tell you.
vostro *danno*,	(*your own* loss or injury), so much the worse for you.
è colpa vostra,	it is *your own* fault.
casa mia *è casa* vostra,	*my* house is (*your own*) at your service.
sono in pena per causa vostra,	I am distressed on *your* account.
fatelo con vostro *comodo*,	do it at *your own* convenience.
vado io in sua *vece*,	I go in *his* stead.
l' avvenire non è in nostra *mano*,	the future is not in *our* hand.
l' ho scritto di propria *mano*.	I have written it with *my own* hand.
con vostra *licenza*,	by *your* leave.
sentite, amico mio,	hear me, *my dear* friend.
che discorsi son questi, Signor mio?	how do you speak, Sir?

4. The same possessive pronouns are both adjectives and substantive, that is, they may be used with or without the noun.

Example.

datemi il vostro *libro e prendete il* mio,	give me *your* book, and take *mine*.
tutto quel che vedete è vostro,	all that you see is *your own*.

5. The possessive pronoun should be omitted whenever it may be obviously implied.

Example.

piange il marito,	she mourns for (the) *her* husband.

ha perduto la testa,	he has lost (the head) *his* senses.
piego il ginocchio,	I bend (the) *my* knee.
portami il cappello,	bring me (the) *my* hat.

6. The personal pronoun is often substituted for the possessive.

Example.

levati il cappello,	take off *thy* hat (to thyself, the hat).
gli *han mozzo il capo,*	they have cut *his* head off (to him, the).
mi *cadde ai piedi*	he fell at *my* feet (to me, at the).
s' è rotto un braccio,	he broke *his* arm (to himself, an).
non ti *son rivale,*	I am not *thy* rival (to thee a).

Exercise XIV.

Here is my horse, and there is yours. Where is your brother? Where are your brothers? Who is your cousin? Who are your cousins? Tell it to your father-in-law. Tell it to your brothers-in-law.

Horse, *cavallo;* brother, *fratello;* cousin, *cugino*, fem. *cugina;* father-in-law, *suocero*, fem. *suocera;* brother-in-law, *cognato*, fem. *cognata;* here is, and there is, *ecco, ed ecco;* where is, *dov' è?* where are, *dove sono?* who is, *chi è?* who are, *chi sono?* tell, *dite.*

Call your mother-in-law. Speak to your sister-in-law. Call your sisters-in-law. What is your ladyship's pleasure? His Holiness is in Rome. Your uncle has married my younger sister. Your pretty sister will be married to-morrow. She has lost her husband. She led her little brother by the hand.

Call, *chiamate;* speak, *parlate;* what is the pleasure of? *che comanda?* has married, *ha sposato;* will be married, *si sposerà;* Ladyship, *Signoria;* Holiness, *Santità;* uncle, *zio;* younger sister, *sorella minore;*

pretty, *bella;* sister, *sorellina;* to-morrow, *domani;* husband, *consorte;* she has lost, *ha perduto;* little brother, *fratellino;* she led by the hand, *conduceva a mano.*

This is my horse. Will you buy my horses? This horse is mine. This is my niece. This is my nephew. This is my best horse. This is my beloved niece. He is my friend. He is no friend of mine. He has hurt his foot.

This, *questo*, fem. *questa;* nephew, niece, *nipote;* beloved, *diletto;* friend, *amico;* will you buy, *volete comprare?* is, *è;* has hurt, *s' è fatto male;* foot, *piede.*

These are thy nieces. These are his nephews. These are their children. These are his sons. These are her daughters. Remember, he is thy son. Remember, they are thy children. Remember, I am thy wife.

These, *questi*, fem. *queste;* child, *figlio;* son, *figlio;* daughter, *figlia;* wife, *moglie;* are, *sono;* remember, *ricordati che;* he is, *è;* I am, *sono.*

She has lost her parents. Their father is dead. They have stolen his purse. He has cut his fingers. His Majesty has lost his crown. This is his Lordship's horse. They throw themselves at your Lordship's feet. They throw themselves at your feet. Put your purse in your pocket.

Parent, *genitore;* purse, *borsa;* finger, *dito;* Majesty, *Maestà;* crown, *corona;* lordship, *signoria;* foot, *piede;* has lost, *ha perduto;* dead, *morto;* has cut, *s' è tagliate;* have stolen, *hanno rubato;* they throw themselves, *si gettano;* put, *mettete;* purse, *borsa;* pocket, *tasca.*

XV.—DEMONSTRATIVE PRONOUNS.

1. Demonstrative Pronouns are used with prepositions.

questo,	*questa,*	*questi,*	*queste,*	this.
cotesto,	*cotesta,*	*cotesti,*	*coteste,*	that.
quello,	*quella,*	*quelli,*	*quelle,*	

(*a*) *Quello, quel,* in the singular, *quegli, quei,* or *que'* in the plural, follow the same euphonic rules as the articles *dello, del, degli, dei* or *de'*.

Examples. quello *spirito,* pl. quegli *spiriti.*
quell' *ingegno,* quegl' *ingegni.*
quel *padre,* quei *padri.*

Quelli is only used when it stands alone without nouns.

Ex. *in* questi *campi e in* quelli, in *these* fields and *those.*

2. *Cotesto* and *quello* are both used for *that;* but *cotesto* refers to the person spoken to, *quello* to the person or thing spoken of.

Example.

prendete questo *libro e portatemi* cotesto, take *this* book, and bring me *that* (*i. e.* the one near you).

andatemi a prender quel *libro,* go and fetch me *that* book (*i. e.* the book yonder, away from you).

This rule is however often disregarded, and the two pronouns indiscriminately used one for other.

3. *Questo* and *quello* are often contrasted in the sense of "the former," "the latter."

Example.

ondeggio fra la speranza e il timore, quella *mi sorride, e m' inganna,* questo *mi agghiaccia e mi uccide,* I waver betwixt hope and fear; *the one* smiles and allures me, *the other* chills and disheartens me.

4. Demonstrative pronouns may be used substantively or absolutely; that is, they may be referred to a noun either understood or implied.

Example.

questo *è il mio duolo,*	*this* is my sorrow.
più sacra insegna è questa,	*this* is a holier standard.
queste *son, vili, le battaglie vostre,*	*these* are, ye cowards, your battles.

The following are used for persons only.

questi, *costui*, } this man; *costei*, this woman; *costoro*, { these men. these women.

quegli, *colui*, } that man; *colei*, that woman; *coloro*, { those men. those women.

Example.

è questi *il vostro Re,*	*this* is your King.
quegli *che vince,*	*he* who conquers.

(*b*) *Costui, costei, costoro, colui, colei, coloro*, often convey a meaning of contempt,

che vuol costui ?	what does *this fellow* want ?

Sometimes they are used in the sense of the highest admiration in poetry :—

"*Chi vuol veder quantunque può natura*
E 'l ciel tra noi venga a mirar costei."
"Whoever would see all that Nature and Heaven
Can achieve here below, must come and behold *this one*."

5. *Questo* and *quello* are used substantively for "this thing," "that thing," more commonly *ciò* for both.

Example.

chi ha fatto questo ?	who has done *this ?*
che significa ciò ?	what is the meaning of *that ?*

6. The English substantive pronoun *what*, i. e. "*that which*," or "*all that which*," must be resolved in Italian into *quello* or *ciò*, followed by the relative *che*, or may be simply translated by *quanto*.

Example.

fate quello che *vi piace*, *fate* quel che *vi piace*, *fate* ciò che *vi piace*,	do *what* you please.
tutto ciò ch' *io m' abbia è tuo,*	*all* I have is thine.

questo è tutto ciò che *m' ha detto*,
ciò è quanto *mi ha detto*, } this is *all* he told me.

Exercise XV.

What is the name of this town? Who are these children? What are these papers? Do not speak to those children. That horse is lame. Those horses are lame. That glass is broken. Those glasses are broken.

Town, *paese;* child, *fanciullo;* paper, *carta;* glass, *specchio;* lame, *zoppo;* broken, *rotto;* what is the name of, *come si chiama?* who are, *chi sono?* what are, *che sono?* do not speak, *non parlate;* is, *è;* are, *sono.*

What are you doing in this town? What are you doing in that town? What is your son doing in that town? Bring me that picture. Fetch me that picture. Bring me those pictures. Take away this picture. Take away these pictures. Fetch me those pictures. Take away those pictures.

Town, *città;* picture, *quadro;* what are you doing, *che fate?* what is—doing, *che fa?* bring, *portate;* fetch, *andate a prendere;* take away, *portate via.*

This man is my best friend. That woman is my worst enemy. I can bear neither the husband nor the wife. The one is proud. The other is silly. My enemies laugh at me. My friends pity me. I do not know whether the former or the latter anger me most.

Friend, *amico*, fem. *amica;* enemy, *nemico*, fem. *nemica;* husband, *marito;* wife, *moglie;* proud, *superbo;* silly, *sciocco;* is, *è;* I can bear, *non posso soffrire;* néither, nor, *nè, nè;* laugh at, *deridono;* pity, *compiangono;* I know not, *non so;* whether, *se*, or *o;* anger me most, *più m' irritino.* (The former or the latter at the end of the sentence.)

Choose between fortune and virtue. The one can make thee rich. The other alone happy. Who said this? Who

has done that? Do what I bid. Believe all he says. Do not believe what that fellow says.

Fortune, *fortuna;* virtue, *virtù;* rich, *ricco;* happy, *felice;* alone, *solo;* choose, *scegli;* can make, *può fare;* who said, *chi disse?* who has done, *chi ha fatto?* do, *fate;* I bid, *comando;* believe, *credete;* he says, *dice;* do not believe, *non credete.*

He has bought these fields. He has sold those fields. He has bought these fields, and sold those. Do not sell your field to that miser. Do not sell your fields to those misers. He buys those fields, and sells these.

Field, *campo;* miser, *avaro;* he has bought, *ha comprato;* has sold, *ha venduto;* do not sell, *non vendete;* he buys, *compra;* sells, *vende.*

XVI.—RELATIVE PRONOUNS.

1. *Quale*, who, which, that, as a Relative Pronoun, is generally declined with articles; adjectively and substantively.

Il quale, la quale, i quali, le quali, del quale, della quale, dei quali, delle quali, etc.

Example.

il qual *padre Cristoforo*, *which* father Christopher.
l' uomo del quale *io parlo*, the man *of whom* I speak.

2. *Che, cui, chi*, are more frequently employed. They are of all genders and numbers, and declined with prepositions only; they are used only substantively.

3. *Che* is used for all cases, but best in the nominative and accusative.

Ex.	*io* che *vi parlo*,	I *who* speak to you.
	il vino che *bevete*,	the wine you drink.
	l' uomo di ch' *io parlo*,	the man I speak *of.*

(*a*) The relative pronoun is not often omitted in Italian.

4. *Cui* is only used in the oblique cases, and best used in the genitive and ablative, with the prepositions *di*, *da*, *per*, *con*, *in*, etc.

Example.

l' uomo di cui *parlo*, the man I speak *of*.
il padrone per cui *lavoro*, the master I work *for*.

(*b*) *Cui* is never used in the nominative, nor often in the accusative; unless it be to avoid ambiguity.

Ex. *il muro* cui *nasconde la casa*, the wall *which* the house hides.
Different from
il muro che *nasconde la casa*, the wall *which* hides the house.

(*c*) *Cui* may be used without prepositions, instead of *di cui*, in the sense of whose; and also instead of *a cui*.

Example.

l' eroe le cui *gesta io canto*, the hero *whose* exploits I sing.
voi cui *fortuna ha posto in mano il freno*, you *to whom* fortune intrusted the destinies, etc.

5. *Chi* is used substantively for *he who*, *she who*, *they who*, *one who*.

Example.

chi *ama teme*, he who loves fears.
guardatevi da chi *vi adula*, beware of those who flatter you.
fidatevi di chi *vi vuol bene*, trust one who loves you.

6. *Chi* and *quale* are also used in the sense of *some*: this —that; one—another.

Example.

in questo mondo chi *sale* chi *scende*, in this world *one* ascends, *another* falls.
chi *piangeva*, chi *rideva*, { *some* were crying, *some laughing*.
quale *potava*, quale *legava le viti*, *some* were pruning, *some* tying up the vines.

7. *Che* is also used substantively.

Example.

non *abbiam* che *mangiare*, we have *nothing* to eat.
han di che *vivere*, they have *wherewith* to live.

il che *è anche meglio*, *which* is even better.
del che *io dubito*, *a thing which* I doubt.

8. *Onde* is used instead of *di cui, da cui, con cui, per cui.*

Example.

l' anima gloriosa onde *si parla*, } the glorious soul we speak *of.*
nella prigione ond' *ora è sciolta*, in the prison she is now freed *from.*
il fuoco ond' *ardo*, the fire I am burning *with.*
per quell' uscio ond' *era entrato*, } the door he had come *through.*

9. *Quale, che, chi,* are also interrogative pronouns.

10. *Quale* means which? or what? and, as interrogative, is used without articles.

Example.

qual *dei due volete?* *which* of the two do you want?
di qual *giorno volete parlare?* *what* day do you mean?
qual *uomo!* *what* a man!
non so di quale *parliate*, { I do not know of which you speak.

11. *Chi* refers only to persons.

Example.

chi *è costei?* *who* is this woman?
chi *sono costoro?* *who* are these persons?
di chi *parlate?* *whom* are you speaking of?
a chi *pensate?* *whom* are you thinking of?
non so chi *sia*, I know not *who* he may be.
indovinate chi *è stato quì*, Guess *who* has been here.
sapete chi *ho veduto?* { Do you know *whom* I have seen?

12. *Che* means *what?* and is used both adjectively and substantively.

Example.

che *uomo!* *what* a man!
che *uomo è?* *what* sort of a man is he?

che *danari avete?*	*what* money have you? (how much money?)
che *volete?*	*what* do you want?
e tu, che *sei?*	and thou, *what* art thou?
a che *pensate?*	*what* are you thinking of?
non so che *cerchiate,*	I do not know *what* you may be looking for.
non saprei che *farne,*	I should not know *what* to do with it.
non so da che *provenga,*	I do not know from *what* it may arise.

Exercise XVI.

The man to whom you speak. The man who speaks to you. The horse I have bought. The money I have lent you. The friends who have forsaken us. The friends we have forsaken. The ladies you have invited.

You speak, *parlate;* speaks, *parla;* I have bought, *ho comprato;* I have lent, *ho prestato;* have forsaken, *hanno abbandonati;* we have forsaken, *abbiamo abbandonati;* you have invited, *avete invitate;* money, *danaro;* lady, *signora.*

The times in which we live. The letter I have read. The house we live in. The dangers from which we have escaped. The man who prides himself. The woman you hate. The house I come from. The girl you have seen.

We live, *viviamo;* I have read, *ho letta;* we live in, *abitiamo;* we have escaped, *siamo scampati;* prides, *gloria;* you hate, *odiate;* I come, *vengo;* you have seen, *avete veduta;* time, *tempo;* letter, *lettera;* danger, *pericolo;* girl, *fanciulla.*

The pens which I have mended. The friend I was living with. Who are you? What do you want? What are you speaking of? Whom are you speaking of? Whom do you see? What do you see? Who wants me? What happened to you? In this world some rise, some fall.

I have mended, *ho temperate;* I was living, *dimorava;* are you, *siete?* do you want, *volete?* are you speaking, *parlate?* do you see, *vedete?* wants, *vuole;* happened, *avvenne;* pen, *penna;* world, *mondo;* rises, *sale;* falls, *scende.*

What house is this? Which of these houses is yours? What [a] fine thing! What fools! How many fools? What will you give me? At what o'clock? Whose fault is it? How old are you? What are you laughing at? What day is it? Guess whom we have at dinner.

Thing, *cosa;* fine, *bello;* fool, *pazzo;* will you give? *volete dare?* what o'clock (what hour?) hour, *ora;* whose fault is it? (of whom is the fault?) fault, *colpa;* how old are you? what age have you? age, *età;* have you, *avete?* what are you laughing at? (of what are you laughing?) are laughing, *ridete;* is it, *è?* we have at dinner, *abbiamo a pranzo.*

He who breathes hopes. Pity those who suffer. Have you nothing to do? I have nothing to hope. He has some one who deceives him. Blessed are those who weep. Who comes? What land is this? Which is your land? Do you know what he has done?

Breathes, *spira;* hopes, *spera;* pity, *compiangete;* suffers, *soffre;* suffer, *soffrono;* have you nothing to do? (not have you what to do, or aught to do?) not have you, *non avete;* to do, *fare;* I have, *ho;* to hope, *sperare;* he has, *ha;* deceives, *inganna;* (some one who, one word;) blessed, *beato*, pl. *beati;* weeps, *piange;* weep, *piangono;* comes, *viene;* land, *terra;* do you know, *sapete;* he has done, *ha fatto.*

XVII.—INDEFINITE PRONOUNS.

1. *Ogni*, every; *qualche*, some; *qualunque*, any, whatever, are adjective pronouns: they are of both genders, and only used in the singular.

Examples.

ogni *rosa ha le sue spine*,	*every* rose has its thorns.
manca da qualche *tempo*,	he has been missing for *some* time.
mandami qualche *libro*,	send me *some* books.
fatelo in qualunque *modo*,	do it *any* way.

(*a*) *Qualsisia, qualsivoglia*, are synonymous with *qualunque*.

2. *Ognuno* (*ogni uno*), every one; *qualcuno* (*qualche uno*), some one, are substantive pronouns, and used in the singular only.

Example.

ognuno *lo dice*,	*every one* says so.
l' ho udito da qualcuno,	I have heard it from *somebody*.

(*b*) *Qualcheduno*, some one; *certuno*, a certain person; *taluno*, such a one, etc., are pronouns of the same nature.

3. *Alcuno*, some, any; *nessuno*, *niuno*, *veruno*, no one, none, not any, are used both adjectively and substantively; they are of two genders, and are also used in the plural.

Example.

se lo trovate in alcun *luogo*,	if you find him *any* where.
ho comprato alcuni *libri*,	I have bought *a few* books.
quì non *vi è* alcuno,	*no one* is here.
non *vi è* nessuno,	there is *nobody*.
io non trovo nessun *rimedio*,	I find *no* remedy.
io non *vi discernea* veruna *cosa*,	I perceived *no* thing.
non *lo dite a* niuno,	tell it to *no one*.

(*c*) The Italian admits of a double negative.

4. *Tutto*, all, every, is of both genders and numbers, and

is used both adjectively and substantively. It is generally followed by the article.

Example.

tutto il *mondo*,	*the whole* world.
tutti gli *uomini*,	*all* men.
io penso a tutto,	I think of *everything*.
tutti *mi vogliono*,	*all* ask for me.

6. *Tale*, such; *medesimo*, *stesso*, same, etc., are mere adjectives, used in both genders and numbers, and declined with articles. Sometimes, however, they are used as substantive pronouns.

Example.

il tal *libro*,	*such a* book.
il medesimo *signore*,	*the same* gentleman.
tale *è la mia speranza*,	*such* is my hope.
è venuto quel tale,	*that certain person* is come.
non sono gli stessi.	they are not *the same*.

6. *Esso, essi; essa, esse*, it, are used sometimes as personal pronouns instead of *egli, eglino; ella, elleno*.

Desso, dessa, dessi, desse, are used in the sense of *the same*.

Ex. *è desso*, or *è quel desso*, it is *he*, it is *the same person*.

7. *Altro, altra, altri, altre*, other, is an adjective pronoun; but *altri, altrui*, are used substantively speaking of persons only; *altri*, in all cases; *altrui*, never in the nominative.

Example.

altri *è lieto*, altri *misero*,	*one* is happy, *another* unhappy.
io non voglio la roba d' altri, *io non voglio la roba* altrui,	I do not wish *other people's* property.
fu apposto altrui,	it was laid *to the charge of other persons*.

8. The following examples may show other peculiarities respecting these pronouns.

Examples.

non *vi è* alcuno *che sappia* tutto,	there is *no one* that knows *everything.*
vi sfido tutti quanti,	I challenge you *as many as you are.*
tremo tutto quanto,	I tremble *all over.*
vengo di tutta fretta,	I come *in great haste.*
per quanti *sforzi facciate,*	*whatever* efforts you may make.
per *poter* che *egli abbia,*	*whatever* power he may have.
per quante *lagrime si spargano,*	*whatever* tears may be shed.
venne da me un certo tale,	*a certain man* called upon me.
certuni *s' imaginano,*	*certain people* fancy.
taluni *si lusingano,*	*some people* flatter themselves.
l' uno *si diverte,* l' altro *si dispera,*	*the one* makes fun, *the other* is in despair.
gli uni *e* gli altri *son mille,*	*both together* are a thousand.
ne diede a ciascun *d' essi,* / *ne diede a* ciascuna *di loro,*	he gave some to *each* of them.
ciascheduno *lo vuole per se,*	*every one* wishes him for himself.
troverete qualcheduno,	you will find *somebody.*
chiunque *lo dice s' inganna,*	*whoever* says so is mistaken.
non cedo a chicchessia,	I yield to *no man in the world.*
mi arrendo a qualsisia *partito,*	I give in to *any* proposal.
non *cedo a* qualsivoglia *ragione,*	I yield to *no* reason.
non lo do per checchessia,	I do not give it for *anything in the world.*
altri *va,* altri *viene,*	*some* go, *some* return.
altro *è il parlar di morte,* altro *è il morire,*	*one thing* it is to speak of death, *another* to die.
parliam d' altro,	let us speak of *something else.*
lo dico a te e non altrui,	I tell it thee and *no one else.*
non desiderare la roba d' altri, / *non desiderare la roba* altrui, / *non desiderare l'* altrui,	do not covet *thy neighbour's* goods.
volete nulla ?	*do you wish for* anything ?
non *ne so* nulla,	*I know* nothing *about it.*
vi è nessuno *in casa ?*	*is* anybody *at home ?*
non vi è nessuno,	*there is* nobody.
sono arrivati ambedue,	*both* are arrived.
ha perduto ambe *le braccia,*	he has lost *both* arms.

Exercise XVII.

Every moment. Every hour. Every man. Every wo-

man. I do not fear any enemy. I do not fear any one. Somebody is at the door. Some friend is at the door. We have invited some friends for this evening. Some gentlemen and some ladies. Some of our relatives, and some of our friends.

Moment, *momento;* hour, *ora;* enemy, *nemico;* door, *porta;* friend, *amico;* relative, *parente;* I do not fear *non temo;* we have invited, *abbiamo invitato.*

I have some books. I have no books. I have given away all books. All my books. All women are angels. All are invited. I have lost everything. I had many friends. I have lost them all. He had a large fortune; he has lost it all.

I have given away, *ho dati via;* are invited, *sono invitati;* I have lost, *ho perduto;* I had, *aveva;* I have lost, *ho perduti;* he had, *aveva;* he has lost, *ha perduta;* angel, *angelo;* fortune, *sostanza;* large, *grande.*

Whatever hope I had. I have no hope. Whatever reason you may have. Whatever reasons you may have. You have no reason. No man hates me. I owe no man anything. Do you see any one? I see no one. I find him nowhere. Some one wants you.

I had, *aveva;* I have no (I not have any), not have, *non ho;* you may have, *abbiate;* you have no (you not have any), not have, *non avete;* hates, *odia;* I owe no (I not owe to any), not owe, *non debbo;* do you see, *vedete?* I see, *vedo;* I find, *trovo;* find nowhere (not find in any place), place, *luogo;* wants, *domanda.*

The one is false, the other is credulous. Neither is to be trusted. Either the one or the other is wrong. Both are wrong. Neither is right. I know them both. I know them all. I know another. I know no one else. Somebody else will pay.

False, *bugiardo;* credulous, *credulo;* neither (neither the one nor the other), neither, nor, *nè—ne;* is to be trusted, *merita fede;* either, or, *o—o;* is wrong, *ha*

torto; are wrong, *hanno torto;* is right, *ha ragione;* I know, *conosco;* I know another (of them I know another); I know no one else (not of them I know any other); somebody else (some other); will pay, *pagherà.*

XVIII.—REGULAR VERBS.

1. There are three conjugations of regular verbs, the first in *are*, like *am-are*, to love; the second in *ere*, like *tem-ere*, to fear; the third in *ire*, like *dorm-ire*, to sleep.

(*a*) The conjugations ought to be four, as in Latin; the second in ēre long, as *tem-ére;* the third in ĕre short, as *créd-ĕre*, to believe; but as, with the exception of the accent of the infinitive, the two conjugations are the same throughout, they are set down as one in most grammars.

2. In every Italian verb, distinction must be made between the *root*, that is, that part of the verb which remains unchanged, as *am-*, *tem-*, *dorm-*, and the *termination*, *are*, *ere*, *ire*, which changes for every mood, tense, number, and person.

3. The first vowel in the termination—*a* in the first conjugation, *e* in the second, *i* in the third, is called the *characteristic;* it constitutes the main difference between the conjugations, and runs more or less constantly throughout them; it is especially observable in the imperfect, indicative and subjunctive, and in the preterit. It is also constant in the future and conditional, both in the second and third conjugation. Not so in the first, where the *e* is uniformly substituted instead of the characteristic *a* throughout those tenses.

4. It is owing to this circumstance, that the above tenses are subject to less anomalies in the conjugation of irregular verbs, whereas the greatest difficulties arise in the present, indicative and subjunctive, in the imperative,

and whenever the characteristic has been departed from in the regular conjugations.

It may be important to observe, 1st, That the final syllable of the plural of all tenses of all Italian verbs is *mo* for the first person, *te* for the second, and generally *no* for the third.

2nd, That the second person of the present indicative, and that of the preterit and subjunctive imperfect, invariably preserve the following analogy: p. ind. *amate*, you love, pret. *amaste*, you loved, subj. imp. *se amaste*, if you loved.

3rd, A very close analogy is also observable between the first and second person plural of the future, and the same persons of the conditional: *ameremo*, fut. we shall love, *ameremmo*, cond. we should love; *amerete*, fut. you will love, *amereste*, cond. you would love.

The following paradigm of the three regular conjugations will enable the pupil to conjugate any regular verb, by applying the root of the verb in question to any of the desinences of the model verbs.

The accent has been laid upon the persons in which it falls upon the termination; in all other cases it is to be understood to fall upon the root of the verb. Ex. *ám*-o, *am*-áva.

The accent however is never written, except at the end of the word, and is only given here as a direction to the learner.

1st—*am*-are (to love). 2nd—*tem*-ere (to fear).
3rd—*dorm*-ire (to sleep).

INDICATIVE MOOD.

PRESENT TENSE.

am-o—	I love.	*tem*-o—I fear,		*dorm*-o—I sleep,	
-i—	thou lovest.	-i.	etc.	-i.	etc.
-a—	he loves.	-e.		-e.	

am-iámo—	we love.	*tem*-iámo.	*dorm*-iámo.
-áte—	ye love.	-éte.	-íte.
-ano—	they love.	-ono.	-ono.

IMPERFECT.

am-áva—	I was	*tem*-éva.	*dorm*-íva.
-ávi—	loving,	-évi.	-ívi.
-áva—	or loved,	-éva.	-íva.
-avámo—	etc.	-evámo	-ivámo.
-aváte—		-eváte.	-iváte.
-ávano—		-évano.	-ívano.

PRETERIT.

am-ái—	I loved,	*tem*-éi *or* étti.	*dorm*-íi.
-ásti—	or did	-ésti.	-isti.
-ò—	love,	-è étte.	-ì.
-ámmo—	etc.	-émmo.	-ímmo.
-áste—		-éste.	-íste.
-árono—		-érono—éttero.	-írono.

FUTURE.

am-erò—	I shall	*tem*-erò.	*dorm*-irò.
-erái—	or will	-erái.	-irái.
-erà—	love,	-erà.	-irà.
-erémo—	etc.	-erémo.	-irémo.
-eréte—		-eréte.	-iréte.
-eránno—		-eránno.	-iránno.

CONDITIONAL.

am-eréi—	I should	*tem*-eréi.	*dorm*-iréi.
-erésti—	or	-erésti.	-irésti.
-erébbe—	would	-erébbe.	-irébbe.
-erémmo—	love,	-erémmo.	-irémmo.
-eréste—	etc.	-eréste.	-iréste.
-erébbero—		-erébbero.	-irébbero.

IMPERATIVE.

(No first person singular.)

am-a— love (thou).	*tem*-i.	*dorm*-i.
-i— let him love.	-a.	-a.
-iámo— let us love.	-iámo.	-iámo.
-áte— love (ye).	-éte.	-íte.
-ino—let them love.	-ano.	-ano.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRESENT TENSE.

Che / That		
am-i— I love	*tem*-a.	*dorm*-a.
-i— or may	-a.	-a.
-i— love,	-a.	-a.
-iámo— etc.	-iámo.	-iámo.
-iáte—	-iáte.	-iáte.
-ino—	-ano.	-ano.

IMPERFECT.

Se / If		
am-ássi— I loved	*tem*-éssi.	*dorm*-íssi.
-ássi— or	-éssi.	-íssi.
-ásse— might	-ésse.	-ísse.
-éssimo- love,	-éssimo.	-issimo.
-áste— etc.	-éste.	-íste.
-éssero—	-éssero.	-íssero.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

PRESENT TENSE.

am-áre, to love. *tem*-ére, to fear. *dorm*-íre, to sleep.

PARTICIPLE PRESENT.

am-ánte, loving. *tem*-énte, fearing. *dorm*-énte, sleeping.

GERUND.

am-ándo loving. *tem*-éndo, fearing. *dorm*-éndo, sleeping.

PARTICIPLE PAST.

am-áto, loved. *tem*-úto, feared. *dorm*-íto, slept.

(*b*) The participle present in *ante, ente*, is found only in a few verbs. It is therefore omitted in many grammars, which give the name of participle present to the gerund in *ando, endo*.

(*c*) To the second person singular of the imperative, the infinitive must be substituted after a negative. Ex. *Non temere*, do not fear. *Nè credere*, nor do thou believe.

Exercise XVIII.

I love my friends. He fears the enemy. What dost thou fear? What do you fear? She sleeps. Do they sleep all night? Fear (thou) God and fear nothing else. They love me as I love them. They were sleeping. How long will she sleep? How long did she sleep? She would sleep still.

The English auxiliary *do* is omitted in the Italian; fear nothing else, turn (not fear anything else); how long, *quanto tempo;* still, *ancora.*

You praise me. We praise you. You will blame him. They will blame her. She sings well. She will sing if you beg (pr. ind.) her. She always sang (imperf.) when I begged (imp.) her. They were sleeping (imp.) when you entered (pret.). We were singing when you called (pret.) us.

To praise, *lodare;* to blame, *biasimare;* to sing, *cantare;* to beg, *pregare;* to enter, *entrare;* to call, *chiamare;* always, *sempre;* when, *quando.*

I shall sing if you dance (pr. ind.). I would dance if you sang (sub. imp.). They will laugh if you sigh. They slept (imp.) while you talked (imp.). They will return without you. They would return before you. When do you return? When will you return? Return to-morrow.

To dance, *ballare;* to laugh, *ridere;* to sigh, *sospirare;* to talk, *parlare;* to return, *tornare;* without, *senza di;* before, *prima di;* to-morrow, *domani.*

Sing (thou) me the songs of thy country. Sing (you)

me the songs of your country. Let him laugh if he dare (ind. pr.). Let him not lose his time. Do not lose thy time. Do not lose your time. Let him sleep if he thinks (pr. ind.) himself safe. Let them sleep if they think (pr. ind.) themselves safe.

To dare *osare;* to lose, *perdere;* to think, *credere;* song, *canzone;* country, *patria;* safe, *sicuro;* time, *tempo.*

I would not fear him if all his friends fought (subj. imp.) by his side. I would defend you, if a thousand enemies assailed (subj. imp.) you. They would pass their time agreeably if they studied (subj. imp.) [in] the morning and played (subj. imp.) [in] the evening. You would esteem her more if you knew (subj. imp.) her better.

To fight, *combattere;* to defend, *difendere;* to assail, *assalire;* to pass, *passare;* to study, *studiare;* to play, *giuocare;* to esteem, *stimare;* to know, *conoscere;* by his side (at his side), side, *fianco;* agreeably, *piacevolmente.*

Fearing him, she shunned (imp.) him. Seeing her, he talked (pret.) to her. He wishes rather to be feared than loved. Surrounded by the enemies he was still fighting (imp.).

To shun, *sfuggire;* he wishes rather to be, *vuol piuttosto essere;* to surround, *circondare;* still, *tuttavia.*

XIX.—AUXILIARY VERBS.

1. The Auxiliary Verbs are *avere*, to have; *essere*, to be.

Pr. In.	Ho—I have,	Pr. In.	Sóno—I am.
	hái. etc.		séi.
	ha.		è.
	abbiámo.		siámo.
	avéte.		siéte.
	hánno.		sóno.

Imper.	*avéva*—I had.	Imper.	éra—I was.
	avévi.		éri.
	avéva.		éra.
	avevámo.		eravámo.
	aveváte.		eraváte.
	avévano.		érano.
Pret.	ébbi—I had.	Pret.	fúi—I was.
	avésti.		fósti.
	ébbe.		fu.
	avémmo.		fúmmo.
	avéste.		fóste.
	ébbero.		fúrono.
Fut.	*avrò*—I shall have.	Fut.	sarò—I shall be.
	avrái.		sarái.
	avrà.		sarà.
	avrémo.		sarémo.
	avréte.		saréte.
	avránno.		saránno.
Condit.	*avréi*—I should	Condit.	saréi—I should be.
	avrésti. have.		sarésti.
	avrébbe.		sarébbe.
	avrémmo.		sarémmo.
	avréste.		saréste.
	avrébbero.		sarébbero.
Impera.	ábbi—have (thou).	Impera.	sii—be (thou).
	ábbia.		sía.
	abbiámo.		siámo.
	abbiáte.		siáte.
	ábbiano.		síano.
Sub. Pr.	ábbia—I may have.	Sub. Pr.	sía—I may be.
	ábbia.		sía.
	ábbia.		sía.
	abbiámo.		siámo.
	abbiáte.		siáte.
	ábbiano.		síano.

Imperf.	*avéssi*—I might	Imperf.	fóssi—I might be.
	avéssi. have.		fóssi.
	avésse.		fósse.
	avéssimo.		fóssimo.
	avéste.		fóste.
	avéssero.		fóssero.
Infin.	*avére*—to have.	Infin.	*éssere*—to be.
Ger.	*avéndo*—having.	Ger.	*esséndo*—being.
Part. Past.	*avúto*—had.	Part. Past.	státo—been.

2. All compound tenses are formed analogously to the English. Only *essere* is, in its compound tenses, conjugated by itself.

Example.

ho avuto, I have had.	sono *stato*, *I have* been.
hanno avuto, they have had.	sono *stati*, *they have* been.
avremo avuto, we shall have had.	saremo *stati*, *we shall have* been.
avendo avuto, having had.	essendo *stato*, *having* been.

3. *Avere* is used for the compound tenses of active and neuter-active verbs.

Ex. *ho imparato*,	I have learnt.
avete dormito,	you have slept.
avevamo ceduto,	we had yielded.
ebbero vivuto,	they had lived.

4. *Essere* is used with passive, neuter-passive, and reflected verbs.

Ex. *sono lodato*,	I am praised.
sono stato lodato,	I have been praised.
ella era *andata*,	she *had* gone.
mi sono *lusingato*,	I *have* flattered myself.
ella si era *lusingata*,	she *had* flattered herself.

5. The participle past after *essere* must agree with the nominative.

Ex. *egli è stato lodato*, *eglino sono stati lodati*.
ella è stata lodata, *elleno sono state lodate*.

6. The participle past after *avere* may or may not agree with the accusative.

Ex. *ha perduto il padre*, he has lost his father.
ha perduto / *ha perduta* } *la madre*, he has lost his mother.
ha perduto / *ha perduti* } *i genitori*, he has lost his parents.

7. It must, however, agree with the accusative when this precedes it.

Ex. *il padre che ha perduto*, the father whom he has lost.
la madre che ha perduta, the mother whom he has lost.
i genitori che ha perduti, the parents whom he has lost.

(*a*) The same rules apply to reflected verbs, when they have the force of active or transitive verbs.

Ex. *non mi son mai sognato una cosa simile*,
or, *non mi son mai sognata una cosa simile*, } I have never dreamt such a thing.
but, *una cosa simile non mela son mai sognata*,

8. The verbs *andare*, *stare*, *venire*, are sometimes used as auxiliaries with the participle present.

Ex. *che* andate *cercando?* what *are* you seeking?
stavamo *giocando*, we *were* playing.
mi venne *punzecchiando*, he *was* teasing me.

9. *Venire* is also frequently used instead of *essere* with passive verbs.

Example.

venne *indotto ad andarsene*, he *was* persuaded to go away.
vengono *tratti in carcere*, they *are* dragged into prison.

10. The active verb assumes a passive meaning when preceded by the particle *si*, one, they, people.

(*a*) The particle *si* does not exactly correspond to the French *on*, or to the German *man*, to which it bears resemblance. The verb that follows the *si*, in Italian, must generally agree with the noun, which is, in fact, its nominative.

Example.

si loda *la povertà e* si amano *le ricchezze*, } men praise poverty and love riches.

(In the French, on loue la pauvreté, et on aime les richesses.)

The real meaning of the Italian is, "Poverty is praised and riches are loved."

11. The following examples will give some useful hints as to the use of the particle *si*.

si vendono cavalli,	horses are sold.
si è venduto un cavallo,	a horse has been sold.
quì si parla Italiano,	Italian is spoken here.
non si dicono queste cose,	such things should not be said.
vivendo s' impara a vivere,	by living we learn to live.
in quel paese si usa da tutti,	in that country it is a general custom.
a tavola non s' invecchia,	we never grow old whilst we sit at the table
all' età mia non si fanno nuove amicizie,	at my age no new friendships are made.
non si è mai veduto un uomo simile,	such a man has never been seen.
fenomeni simili non si son mai veduti,	such wonders have never been seen.
se ne parla dappertutto,	it is talked of everywhere.
si sogna ciò che si desidera,	one dreams what one wishes.
queste cose si sanno da tutti,	these things are known to all.
non se ne sa niente,	nothing is known about it.
non si può negarlo,	one cannot deny it.
si richiede coraggio per farlo,	it requires courage to do it.
se n' è perduta la razza,	the breed has been lost (of them—of some animals, etc.).

Exercise XIX.

I am hungry. You are thirsty. We were warm and they were cold. He was in a hurry. You shall be sleepy. If you were (imp. subj.) right I should be wrong. They were both right. My friend is wrong. You are wise. Why art thou in so great a hurry? How cold she is!

Hunger, *fame;* thirst, *sete;* warmth, *caldo;* cold, *freddo;* hurry, *fretta;* sleep, *sonno;* right, *ragione;* wrong, *torto;* why, *perchè;* so great, *tanto;* to be hungry, thirsty, warm, cold, etc.; *aver fame, sete, etc.;* to be in a hurry, *aver fretta;* to be wise, *aver giudizio;* to be right, *aver ragione;* to be wrong, *aver torto;* how cold she is! what cold she has!

Be wise, my son. I have bought those books. These are the books (which) I have bought. This is the pen he has mended. The pens have been mended. I have mended the pens. You will have patience. Have patience. She will have courage. Let them have courage.

To buy, *comprare;* to mend, *temperare;* patience, *pazienza;* courage, *coraggio;* pen, *penna.*

Let her have patience. Let us be merciful. Let us forgive. You would be sure of success if you had (subj.) imp.) patience. You will be forgiven if you (pr. ind.) ask for pardon. You shall have friends if you are not (pr. subj.) so fickle. They would be rich if they had (subj. imp.) all they formerly had (imp. ind.).

Merciful, *misericordioso;* to forgive, *perdonare;* sure, *certo;* of success, *di riuscire;* you will be forgiven (to you will be forgiven); to ask for, *domandare;* pardon, *perdono;* fickle, *volubile;* rich, *ricco;* all they had (all that which they had); formerly, *una volta.*

The country would be armed if it had (subj. imp.) any fear of war. The enemies will be beaten if they have (pr. ind.) the courage to assail us. Have (thou) mercy. Be (you) just if you wish (pr. ind.) to be free. Let them have life and liberty. Be this the last proof of my kindness. Be friends.

To arm, *armare;* to beat, *battere;* to assail, *assalire;* to wish, *volere;* country, *paese;* fear, *timore;* war, *guerra;* enemy, *nemico;* courage, *coraggio;* mercy, *pietà;* life, *vita;* liberty, *libertà;* last, *ultimo;* proof, *prova;* kindness, *bontà.*

Provided thou hast learned. Whoever he may be I do not fear him. Whatever power he may have. I would try if I were (subj. imp.) sure of success. Although he might have been deceived. Whenever he may repent (himself). Wherever he may be apprehended.

Provided, *purchè;* whoever, *chiunque;* whatever, *qualunque;* although, *quantunque;* whenever, *ogniqual-*

volta; wherever, *ovunque.* (All these pronouns and conjunctions must be followed by the subjunctive.)

To learn, *imparare;* to deceive, *ingannare;* to try, *tentare;* to repent, *pentirsi;* to apprehend, *arrestare;* power, *potere.*

I have deceived him. He has deceived himself. They would have deceived themselves. They talk of war. These birds are found in the mountains. People did not believe the news. These wonders are seen every day. French is spoken here. Horses are sold cheaper in winter than in summer.

To deceive, *ingannare;* to talk or speak, *parlare;* to find, *trovare;* to believe, *credere;* to see, *vedere;* to sell, *vendere;* bird, *uccello;* mountain, *monte;* news, *nuova;* wonder, *prodigio;* French, *Francese;* cheap, *a buon mercato;* winter, *inverno;* summer, *estate.*

Friendship is strengthened by time. Children are spoilt by too much kindness. Men are bought and sold like cattle. It required more patience.

To strengthen, *raffermare;* to spoil, *guastare;* to require, *richiedere;* friendship, *amicizia;* time, *tempo;* kindness, *bontà;* cattle, *bestiame.*

XX.—MOODS AND TENSES.

1. The Italian has two past tenses, the Preterit or Perfect, and the Imperfect tense.

2. The Preterit expresses a complete and definite action.

Example.

gli parlai *ieri,*	I *spoke* to him yesterday.
l' aspettai *gran tempo,*	I *waited* for him a long time.

3. The Imperfect expresses an incomplete, or an inde-

finitely continued or repeated, action: also an action dependent upon another equally past action. It is an indefinite, narrative, and descriptive tense.

Example.

io l'aspettava *ancora*,	I *was waiting* for him yet.
io gliene parlava *un giorno*,	I *was speaking* to him of it one day.
ella dormiva *quando entrai*,	she *was sleeping* when I entered.
cavalcava *quand' era giovine*,	I *rode* (*used to ride*) when I was young.
gli parlava *ogni volta che l'* incontrava,	I *spoke* (*used to speak*) to him whenever I *met* (*chanced to meet*) him.

4. The following examples illustrate the use of these tenses:—

presso i Romani si ardevano *i cadaveri*,	dead bodies *were burnt* among the Romans.
diceva *Catone esser difficile, il salvare una republica ove una starna* si vendeva a *più alto prezzo che un bove.*	Cato used to say it was difficult to save a state where a partridge fetched a higher price than an ox.
così si scriveva *nei tempi andati*,	thus *did* men *write* in olden times.
così si scriveva *mentre fioriva il* buon gusto,	thus *did* men *write* when good taste *prevailed.*
così si scrisse *finchè* fiorì *il buon gusto*,	thus *did* men *write* so long as good taste *prevailed.*
vidi *un naviglio su cui* erano *due donne che* piangevano,	I *saw* a ship on which *were* two women *weeping.*
c' era *una volta un Re*,	once upon a time there *was* a King.
fu *già un Re il cui nome* era—	there *was* once a King whose name was—
fu *coronato quand'* era *ancora fanciullo*,	he *was* crowned whilst he *was* yet a child.
era *già re mentre* era *ancora fanciullo*,	he *was* already a king, whilst yet a child.
io era *innocente, e pur* fui *punito*,	I *was* innocent, and yet was punished.
invitò *quanti amici aveva*,	he *invited* as many friends as he *had.*

morì *il giorno stesso in cui io* nacqui, — he *died* on the very day I *was born*.

spuntava *il giorno quand' egli* morì, — day *was dawning* when he *died*.

(*a*) These tenses are almost invariably subject to the same rules as in French, only the Italian admits of greater freedom and latitude; and the tenses are indiscriminately substituted for one another.

5. The compound of the Present expresses a past action belonging to a period either not entirely elapsed or recent.

Example.

gli ho parlato *oggi stesso*, — I *have spoken* to him this very day.

me ne ha parlato ieri, — he *has spoken* to me about it yesterday.

(*b*) In the second of these examples the Preterit may be equally used,— *me ne* parlò *ieri*.

6. The compound of the Imperfect expresses a past action, anterior to another past action.

Example.

l' avea veduto *prima ch' egli* entrasse, — I *had seen* him ere he *entered*.

7. The compound of the Preterit is used in the same sense, but after the conjunctions, *quando*, when; *poichè*, since; *tosto che*, as soon as, etc.

Example.

quando l' ebbi *veduto*,
tosto ch' io l' ebbi *veduto*,
appena io l' ebbi *veduto*,
veduto che l' ebbi,
} *lo chiamai*; {
when I *had* seen him,
as soon as I *saw* him,
hardly *did* I see him,
} I called out to him.

8. Any verb preceded by another verb, either expressed or understood, implying desire, wish, fear, doubt, wonder, belief, consent, or command, is generally used in the Subjunctive.

Example.

io non so chi tu sia, — I know not who thou *art*.

si dice ch' egli sia *morto*, — they say he *is* dead.

credeva che fosse *partito*, — I thought he *had* gone.

vorrei che tu mi credessi,	I would wish thee to *believe* me.
pensate quanto ciò mi affliggesse,	think how much this *distressed* me.
lo farò quando vi piaccia,	I will do it whenever it *may please* you.
ditegli che parta *quando vuole*,	tell him he *may go* when he likes.
basta ch' io sappia *dove andate*,	enough that I *know* where you go.
mi maraviglio che siate *ancor qui*,	I am surprised to see you still here.
non impedisco che giochiate,	I do not prevent you from playing.
la pena è più grave di quel che ogni fallo mai fosse,	the punishment is heavier than any crime ever *could be*.
non ha paura di cosa alcuna che sia *al mondo*,	he fears nothing in the world.
chiunque sia, *nol temo*.	whoever he may be, I fear him not.
la speranza è la sola amica che non ci abbandoni,	hope is the only friend who never *deserts* us.

(*c*) The whole theory of the Subjunctive depends on this,—that a verb expressing an action upon which any doubt falls, should be used in the Subjunctive.

	Example.
si dà per certo *che la pace* sia *fatta*,	they say for certain that the peace *is* made.
è certo *che la pace* è *fatta*,	it is positive that the peace *is* made.
voglio sposare una donna che m' ama,	I wish to marry a woman who *loves* me.
voglio sposare una donna che m' ami,	I will marry some woman who *may love* me.
è il miglior amico ch' io ho,	he is the best friend I *have*.
è il miglior amico ch' io m' abbia,	he is the best friend (perhaps) that I *have*.
se lo vedete *parlategliene*.	if you *see* him speak to him about it.

gliene parlerò se lo vedo,	I shall speak to him about it if I *see* him.
gliene parlerei se lo vedessi,	I would speak to him about it if I *saw* him.
m' avrebbe ucciso se tu non eri,	he would have killed me, if it *had* not been for thee.
credo *ch' egli* viva *ancora*,	*I think* he *lives* still.
credo *che il Redentor mio* vive,	*I believe* that my Redeemer *lives*.

9. The following examples are given as an illustration of the use of the infinitive.

1st. The infinitive without preposition.

vorrei parlarvi,	I wish *to* speak to you.
quanto vorrei non saper scrivere,	how I would wish not *to* know *how to* write.
io non poteva crederlo,	I could not believe it.
l' ho fatto venire,	I have made him come.
lasciatela piangere,	let her weep.
bisogna aver fede,	one must have faith.
dovete rispettarlo,	you must respect him.
basta guardarla,	it is enough *to* look at her.

2nd. The infinitive with the preposition *di*.

spero di *vedervi*,	I hope *to* see you.
vi prego di *spiegarvi meglio*,	I beg you *to* explain yourself better.
gli ho promesso di *pagarlo*,	I have promised *to* pay him.
è contenta di *sposarlo*,	she is willing *to* marry him.
mi comanda di *aspettarlo*,	he bids me wait for him.
è risoluto di *morire*,	he is determined *to* die.

3rd. The infinitive with the preposition *a*.

comincio a *capire*,	I begin *to* understand.
impariamo a *cantare*,	we learn *to* sing.
vi consiglio a *star zitto*,	I advise you *to* hold your tongue.
son pronto a *riceverlo*,	I am ready *to* receive him.
son solito ad *alzarmi per tempo*,	I am used *to* rise betimes.
non mi forzate a *rispondervi*,	do not force me *to* answer you.
disponetevi a *morire*,	prepare yourself *to* die.
avvezzatevi a *soffrire*,	accustom yourself *to* endure.

4th. The infinitive with *di* or *a*.

persuadetelo di, *or* ad, *andarsene*,	induce him *to* go.
pregatela di, *or* a, *restare*,	beg her *to* stay.

5th. The infinitive with *per*.

vengo per *dirvi*,	I come *to* (*in order to*) tell you.
lo dice per *farmi dispetto*,	he says it *to* (*in order to*) spite me.

lo fo' per *compiacervi*,	I do it *to* (*in order to*) please you.

6th. The infinitive with *da*.

ho da *scrivere una lettera*,	I have a letter *to* write.
sono cose da *non credersi*,	they are things not *to* be believed.
è uomo da *farlo*,	he is the man *to* do it.

7th. The infinitive with other prepositions.

è da sciocco il parlare senza *riflettere*,	it is foolish to speak *without* thinking.
dopo *aver pranzato cominciò a sentirsi male*,	he began to feel ill *after* dining.
avea deciso ciò ch' io dovessi fare prima *d' alzarmi*,	I had made up my mind what to do *before* getting up.
trovavasi vicino *a morire*,	he was near his death.

8th. The infinitive with the article.

mi piace il *cavalcare*,	I like riding.
stanco del *tanto viaggiare*,	tired *of* so much travelling.
siate cauti nello *scrivere*,	be cautious *in* writing.
lo conosco al *vestire*,	I know him *by* his dress.
è virtù il *parlar poco*,	*to* talk little is a virtue.
non lo stogliete dal rompersi il collo,	do not prevent him *from* breaking his neck.

10. The gerund is never used with a preposition or article, the infinitive being usually substituted.

Example.

insegnando *s' impara*, / coll' insegnare *s' impara*,	one learns *by teaching*.
l' appetito viene mangiando, / *l' appetito viene* nel mangiare,	appetite comes *by eating*.

11. The participle present in *ante*, *ente*, is seldom used; the relative pronoun with the indicative being generally substituted.

Example.

diversi principii tendenti *allo stesso scopo*, *or* che tendono *allo stesso scopo*,	different principles *tending* to the same aim.
selvaggi viventi *di carne umana*, *or* che vivono *di carne umana*,	savages *living* on human flesh.

Exercise XX.

Whilst she sang I heard a noise. She was talking and I listened. I listened all the time that she sang. I believed it because you assured me of it. He related it to me when they called him and took him away. It rained and I had no umbrella.

To hear, *sentire;* to listen, *ascoltare;* to believe, *credere;* to assure, *assicurare;* to relate, *raccontare;* to call, *chiamare;* to take, *menare;* away, *via;* to rain, *piovere;* it rains, *piove;* whilst, *mentre;* noise, *romore;* all the time that, *tutto il tempo che;* because, *perchè;* when, *quando;* umbrella, *ombrella;* I had no (I not had).

The army was returning from France when the King called together a council. In ancient times the greatest men ploughed. He heard that they were slaves. Alexander treated his enemies humanely. Alexander treated Porus as a King.

To return, *tornare;* to call together, *convocare;* to plough, *arare la terra;* to hear, *udire;* to treat, *trattare;* army, *esercito;* council, *concilio;* ancient, *antico;* time, *tempo;* slave, *schiavo;* Alexander, *Alessandro;* Porus, *Poro;* humanely, *umanamente;* as a King, *da Re.*

As many as were in that house were arrested. He was yet young when he was raised to the throne. The war lasted thirty years. The war raged still when the King died. In the time that the French were driven from Italy. At that time the French were still in Italy.

To arrest, *arrestare;* to raise, *innalzare;* to last, *durare;* to rage, *infierire;* to die, *morire;* to drive, *cacciare;* as many as, *quanti;* throne, *trono;* war, *guerra;* yet, still, *ancora;* in the time that, *al tempo che;* French, *Francese.*

I think it rains. I see it rains. I thought you had spoken to him. I was sure you had spoken to him. I am

certain she loves him. I believe for certain she loves him. Do you fancy I am a fool? Tell me where you go. Do you know where you go?

To think or believe, *credere;* to see, *vedere;* to fancy, *immaginarsi;* tell me, *ditemi;* do you know, *sapete?* sure, *certo;* for certain, *di certo;* where, *dove;* a fool, *pazzo.*

I had seen your danger before you fell (subj. imp.) into it. When I had seen the danger I avoided it. If you had seen the danger you would have avoided it. As soon as they had received the order they obeyed. If they had received the letter they would have answered. When I receive a letter I answer.

To fall, *cadere;* to avoid, *evitare;* to receive, *ricevere;* to obey, *ubbidire;* to answer, *riscontrare;* danger, *pericolo;* before, *prima che;* into it, *vi;* order, *ordine;* as soon as, *tosto che.*

They have suffered him to die. I was not able to prevent it. It suffices that you ask it. They request you to forgive (to) him. They wish to embrace them. They are content to forget the past. They order me to set out instantly. They asked to pay.

To suffer, *lasciare;* to die, *morire;* to be able, *potere;* to prevent, *impedire;* it suffices, *basta;* to ask, *domandare* (it suffices to you to ask it, *or* it suffices that you ask it); to request, *supplicare;* to forgive, *perdonare;* to wish, *desiderare;* to embrace, *abbracciare;* to be content, *contentarsi;* to forget, *dimenticare;* to order, *comandare;* to set out, *partire;* to pay, *pagare;* they asked (they wished); the past, *il passato;* instantly, *subito.*

I demand to be heard. I advise you to listen to me. They exhorted me to have patience. The trees begin to blossom. I have learnt to hold my tongue. Are you ready to fight? Do not force me to punish you. He speaks so to insult me. They jest to make you laugh. I lend you a book to read.

To demand, *domandare;* to hear or listen to, *ascoltare;* to exhort, *esortare;* to begin, *cominciare;* to blossom, *germogliare;* to learn, *imparare;* to hold one's tongue, *tacersi;* to fight, *battersi;* to force, *sforzare;* to punish, *punire;* to insult, *insultare;* to jest, *scherzare;* to make, *fare;* to laugh, *ridere;* to lend, *prestare;* to read, *leggere;* tree, *albero;* ready, *pronto;* so, *così.*

It is necessary to be cautious. It is not enough to have money. The greatest victory is to conquer one's self. The best way to obtain honours is not always to deserve them. Lavish in spending other people's money. Unequalled in painting.

To be necessary, *bisognare;* to be enough, *bastare;* to conquer, *vincere;* to obtain, *conseguire;* to spend, *spendere;* to paint, *dipingere;* to deserve, *meritare;* cautious, *cauto;* money, *danaro;* victory, *vittoria;* way, *modo;* honour, *onore;* lavish, *prodigo;* other people's money, (other's) one word, *altri;* unequalled, *senza pari.*

He earns his living by teaching. He was drowned (drowned himself) in crossing the river. Mortals, ever wavering between hope and fear. I hear a woman singing. I saw a woman gathering flowers. I saw some children dancing. A group of dancing children.

To earn, *gaudagnare;* to teach, *insegnare;* to drown, *affogare;* to cross, *attraversare;* to waver, *ondeggiare;* I hear, *odo;* I saw, *vidi;* to gather, *cogliere;* to dance, *danzare* or *ballare;* living, *vitto;* river, *fiume;* mortal, *mortale;* hope, *speranza;* fear, *timore;* woman, *donna;* flower, *fiore;* group, *gruppo;* child, *fanciullo.*

XXI.—IRREGULAR VERBS.

FIRST CONJUGATION.

1. The Imperfect, Indicative, and Subjunctive, the Gerund, and the second person plural of the Present Indicative, are almost always regular in all conjugations.

2. The second person singular, the first and second plural of the preterit, are always regular. Ex.: from *piangere*, to weep.

PRET.—piansi, *piangesti*, pianse, *piangemmo*, *piangeste*, piansero.

3. The Future and Conditional are always regular, though sometimes subject to contraction. Ex.: from *vedere*, to see. Fut. vedrò; Cond. vedrei.—From *tenere*, to hold. Fut. terrò; Cond. terrei; both tenses are regular throughout all persons, as to termination.

Fut. *vedrò*, *vedrai*, *vedrà*, *vedremo*, *vedrete*, *vedranno*.
Cond. *terrei*, *terresti*, *terrebbe*, *terremmo*, *terreste*, *terrebbero*.

4. Any contraction in the Infinitive always runs through the Future and Conditional. Ex.: *porre* (contr. of *ponere*), to put. Fut. *porrò*, etc.; Cond. *porrei*, etc.

5. Any irregularity of the Present Indicative always occurs again in the Imperative and Present Subjunctive.

6. Some constant anomalies, chiefly resulting from the laws of euphony, occur in verbs otherwise regular.

1*st*. Verbs in *c-are* and *g-are* take an *h* before all those terminations which begin by an *e* or an *i*.

Ex. *manc-are*, to fail.

Pr. Ind. *manc-o*, manch-i, *manc-a* manch-iamo, *manc-ate*, *manc-ano*.
Imperat. *manc-a*, manch-i, manch-iamo, *manc-ate*, manch-ino.
Subj. Pr. manch-i, 3 persons; manch-iamo, manch-iate, manch-ino.
Fut. manch-erò, manch-erai, etc.; Cond. manch-erei, manch-eresti, etc.

So, *preg-are*, to pray. Pr. Ind. *preg-o*, pregh-i, etc.

2nd. Verbs in *ci-are* and *gi-are* drop the *i* before *i* or *e*.

Ex. *cianci-are*, to chat.

Pr. Ind. *cianci-o*, cianc-i, *cianci-a*, cianc-iamo, *cianci-ate*, *cianci-ano*.

Imperat. *cianci-a*, cianc-i, cianc-iamo, *cianci-ate*, cianc-ino.

Subj. Pr. cianc-i, 3 pers.; cianc-iamo, cianc-iate, cianc-ino.

Fut. cianc-erò, etc. Cond. cianc-erei, etc.

So, *mangi-are*, to eat. Pr. Ind. *mangi-o*, mang-i, etc.

3rd. Verbs in *gli-are* and *chi-are* drop the *i* only before *i*.

Ex. *pigli-are*, to advise.

Pr. Ind. *pigli-o*, pigl-i, etc. Fut. *pigli-erò*, etc.

So, *invecchi-are*, to grow old.

Pr. Ind. *invecchi-o*, invecch-i, etc. Fut. *invecchi-erò*, etc.

4th. Other verbs in *iare* drop the *i* before an *i*, unless that vowel constitutes the whole termination, or unless the accent falls upon it.

Ex. *odi-are*, to hate.

Pr. Ind. *odi-o*, *odi-i*, *odi-a*, od-iamo, etc.

Imper. *odi-a*, *odi-i*, odi-amo, *odi-ate*, od-ino.

Subj. Pr. *odi-i*, 3 pers.; od-iamo, od-iate, od-ino.

So, *invi-are*, to send.

Pr. Ind. *inví-o*, *inví-i*, *inví-a*, inv-iámo, *invi-áte*, *inví-ano*.

Imper. *inví-a*, *inví-i*, inv-iámo, *invi-áte*, *inví-ino*.

Subj. Pr. *inví-i*, 3 pers.; inv-iamo, inv-iate, *inví-ino*.

5th. *Giocare*, to play, takes a *u*, wherever the accent falls upon the *o*.

Pr. Ind. giuóco, giuóchi, giuóca, *giochiàmo*, *giocàte*, giuócano.

Imper. giuóca, giuóchi, *giochiamo*, *giocàte*, giuóchino.

Subj. Pr. giuóchi, 3 pers.; *giochiamo*, *giochiate*, giuóchino.

So likewise, *arrolare*, to enlist; *rotare*, to wheel; *sonare*, to play; *rinnovare*, to renew; *infocare*, to inflame, etc. etc. The same anomalies occur also in the second conjugation. See *cuocere*, *muovere*, etc.

7. There are only three irregular verbs of the first con-

jugation, *andare*, *dare*, *stare*. *Fare*, contract. of *facere*, belongs to the second conjugation. See irregular verbs of the 2nd conjugation.

1*st*. *Andare*, to go. Ger. *andando*, going. P. P. *andato*, gone (neut. pass.).

Pr. Ind. vo, *or* vado, vai, va, *andiamo*, *andate*, vanno. Imp. *andava*. Pret. *andai*. Fut. *andrò*, or *anderò*, etc. Cond. andrei, or *anderei*, etc.

Imper. va, vada, *andiamo*, *andate*, vadano.

Subj. Pr. vada 3 pers.; *andiamo*, *andiate*, vadano. Imp. *andassi*.

(*Andare*, like all neuter passive verbs, has its compound tenses conjugated with *essere*, *sono andato*, *era andato*, I have gone, I was gone, etc.)

Trasandare, to exceed or neglect, and *riandare*, to go over again or consider, both compound of *andare*, are, however, regular.

Pr. Ind. *trasando*, *trasandi*, etc.

2*nd*. *Dare*, to give. Ger. *dando*. P. P. *dato* (act. verb).

Pr. Ind. *do*, dai, *dà*, *diamo*, *date*, danno. Imp. *dava*. Pret. diedi, *or* detti, desti, diede, *or* dette, demmo, deste, diedero, *or* dettero. Fut. darò, etc. Cond. darei, etc.

Imper. *dà*, dia, *diamo*, *date*, diano.

Subj. Pr. dia, 3 pers.; *diamo*, *diate*, diano. Imp. dessi, dessi, etc.

Ridare, to give again, *addarsi*, to perceive, conjugated like *dare*.

3*rd*. *Stare*, to stay or stand, all conjugated like *dare* (neut. pass.). Ger. *stando*. P. P. *stato*.

Pr. Ind. *sto*, stai, etc. Imp. *stava*. Pret. stetti, stesti, stette, stemmo, steste, stettero. Fut. starò, etc. Cond. starei, etc.

Imper, *sta*, stia, etc.

Pr. Sub. stia, etc. Imp. stessi, etc.

Ristare, to stop; *distare*, to be distant; *soprastare*, to temporise, are all conjugated like *stare*.

Soprastare, or *sovrastare*, to rule, or to impend, is regular throughout.

Pr. Ind. *sovrasto*, *sovrasti*, etc.

Exercise XXI.

I think that some one is missing (subj. pl.). Two pages are missing. We have given our word, and shall not fail. You will soon weary of my company. They would beg him in vain. Thou fearest that I may avenge myself. I must find some one that will bind (subj. pl.) me these books.

To think, *credere*; to be missing, *mancare*; to fail, *mancare*; to weary, *stancare*; to beg, *pregare*; to avenge, *vendicare*; to bind, *legare*; I must find, *bisogna ch' io trovi*; some one, *qualcuno*; page, *pagina*; word, *parola*; company, *compagnia*; book, *libro*; in vain, *indarno*.

Why do you quarrel? I do not know why they quarrel (sub. pr.). Thus dost thou leave me? I will never leave thee in peace. If thou dost not eat these apples, the pigs will eat them. Tell them to leave me (that they may leave me) in peace. It is necessary that thou shouldst take (subj. pr.) this medicine. Be sure that we do not hate thee. How can I be sure that thou dost not hate me? I shall hate thee if thou hatest me. I care not whether they hate or love me (subj. pr.).

To quarrel, *litigare*; I do not know why, *non so perchè*; to leave, *lasciare*; to eat, *mangiare*; it is necessary, *bisogna*; to hate, *odiare*; be sure that, *sii certo che*; how can I be sure that, *come posso esser certo che?* I care not whether, *non mi importa che*; never, *nonmai*; apple, *mela*; pig, *porco*; peace, *pace*; medicine, *medicina*.

Birds renew their feathers every year. I play hearts and thou playest diamonds. Play and I will sing. Sing

and I will play. Give me the horse and walk. I ride and he walks. Where are you going? Where are those pilgrims going? Where were you going when I met you? Where did you go yesterday? He promenades all day and neglects his business. He is gone away. Do (you) not go away. Tell (to) him he may go (subj. pr.). Tell him he may go away. Go into the ante-chamber, but do not go away. He gave me his orders, and then went home. Give him your orders, and he shall go away. The best friends go away and leave me alone.

To renew, *rinnovare;* to play (cards), *giocare;* to play (music), *sonare;* to go, *andare;* to walk, *andare a piedi;* to ride, *andare a cavallo;* to promenade, *andare a spasso;* to go away, *andarsene;* to meet, *incontrare;* to neglect, *trasandare;* tell, *dite;* bird, *uccello;* feather, *penna;* hearts, *cuori;* diamonds, *quadri*, or *denari;* pilgrim, *pellegrino;* where, *dove;* yesterday, *ieri;* when, *quando*; business, *affare* (in plur.); ante-chamber, *anticamera;* order, *ordine;* home, *a casa;* then, *poi;* alone, *solo.*

Where do you live? The doctor lives in the same street. How do you do? I am very well. How is your mother? She was quite well when I left her. He stood in suspense. How long will you stay in this country? Let us look on. Go to my father's, he will give you some letters. These are the letters he gave me.

To live (to dwell), *stare* (*di casa*); to do, to be, in health, *stare* (*di salute*); to stand, *stare;* in suspense, *sospeso;* to stay, *stare;* to look on, *stare a vedere.*

To my father's, at my father's (*da mio padre*); the Italian *da* is used to correspond to the French *chez.*

Doctor *medico;* street, *strada;* how, *come;* country, *paese;* letter, *lettera;* how long, *quanto*, or *quanto tempo.*

He gives (to) me back what he has stolen from (to) me. If they perceive (of) your intentions, they will go away.

I have not perceived (of) the trick. Good Christians give all to the poor. He gave himself much trouble. I have given myself no great trouble.

To give back, *ri-dare;* to steal, *rubare;* to perceive, *ad-darsi;* intention, *intenzione;* trick, *scherzo;* poor, *povero,* in plur.; trouble, *disturbo.*

What threatens me? These are the calamities that hang over us. If they hesitate, they are lost. I do not know where it begins (subj. pr.). I do not hope that they will change (subj. pr.). The more he reviews the past, the more he finds it strange. You will fatigue yourself. You will change your mind, if you think it over again.

To threaten, to hang over, to hesitate, *sovra-stare;* to lose, *perdere;* to begin, *cominciare;* to hope, *sperare;* to change, *cangiare;* to review, *ri-andare;* to find, *trovare;* to fatigue, *stancare;* to change one's mind, *cangiar d' idea;* to think over again, *ripensare;* it (to it), *ci;* I do not know, *non so;* the more, *più;* strange, *strano;* the past, *il passato;* calamity, *sciagura.*

XXII.—IRREGULAR VERBS.

SECOND CONJUGATION.

1. The following are the only regular verbs of the second conjugation.

battere,	to beat.	*mescere,*	to mix.
cedere,	to yield.	*mietere,*	to reap.
compiere,	to accomplish.	*pascere,*	to feed.
credere,	to believe.	*pendere,*	to hang.
fendere,	to cleave.	*perdere,*	to lose.
fremere,	to fret, or rage.	*premere,*	to press.
gemere,	to groan.	*ricevere,*	to receive.
godére,	to enjoy.	*riflettere,*	to reflect.

ripetere,	to repeat.	*tondere*,	to shear.
splendere,	to shine.	*vendere*,	to sell.
temére,	to fear.		

(*a*) The verbs *assistere*, *esistere*, *consistere*, are regular, with the exception of the past participle, *assistito*, *esistito*, etc.

(*b*) *Cedere* has the preterit *cessi* besides *cedei*; *perdere* has two preterits, *persi* or *perdei*, and two past participles, *perso* or *perduto*.

(*c*) *Appendere*, compound of *pendere*, has pret. *appesi*; past par. *appeso*.

(*d*) *Riflettere* is regular when it means to reflect, to consider; but it has pret. *riflessi*, and past par. *riflesso*, when it means to reverberate.

2. Some of the verbs of the second conjugation, such as *cuocere*, to cook; *muovere*, to move; have an anomaly in the present, in the imperative, and present subjunctive, analogous to what we have seen in the first conjugation respecting the verb *giocare*, that is, they take a *u* whenever the accent falls upon the *o*.

Ex. cuócere, to cook; Ger. *cocèndo*; P. P. cotto.
Pr. In. cuóco, cuóci, cuóce, *cociàmo*, *cocète*, cuócono.
Imper. cuóci, cuóca, *cociàmo*, *cocète*, *cuócano*.
Sub. Pr. cuóca, 3 persons; *cociámo*, *cociáte*, cuócano.

3. A great number of verbs of the second conjugation have irregular preterits and past participles.

The irregularity of the preterit is, however, as we have said, confined to the 1st and 3rd person singular, and 3rd plural.

Ex. from *cuocere*, to cook.

Pret. cossi, *cocesti*, cosse, *cocemmo*, *coceste*, cossero.

4. The following table contains the most frequent anomalies. They run through all compound verbs, as *sottrarre*, *ritrarre*, from *trarre*; *disfare*, *contraffare*, from *fare*, etc etc.

a	**trarre* (*traere*),	Pret. *trassi*,	P. P. *tratto*,	to draw.
b	*assorbere*,	*assorsi*,	*assorto*,	to absorb.
c	**tacére*,	*tacqui*,	*taciuto*,	to be silent.

	**condurre* (*conducere*),	*condussi*,	*condotto*,	to guide.
	**fare* (*facere*),	*feci*,	*fatto*,	to do or make.
	**dire* (*dicere*),	*dissi*,	*detto*,	to tell or say.
	rilucere,	*rilussi*,		to shine.
	**cuocere*,	*cossi*,	*cotto*,	to cook.
c	*vincere*,	*vinsi*,	*vinto*,	to conquer.
	torcere,	*torsi*,	*torto*,	to twist.
	nuocere,	*nocqui*,	*nociuto*,	to hurt or injure.
	nascere,	*nacqui*,	*nato*,	to be born.
	crescere,	*crebbi*,	*cresciuto*,	to grow.
	conoscere,	*conobbi*,	*conosciuto*,	to know.
	**cadere*,	*caddi*,	*caduto*,	to fall.
	**vedere*,	*vidi*,	*veduto*,	to see.
	persuadere,	*persuasi*,	*persuaso*,	to persuade.
	invadere,	*invasi*,	*invaso*,	to invade.
	cedere,	*cessi*, or *cedei*,	*ceduto*,	to yield.
	ledere,	*lesi*,	*leso*,	to hurt, to violate.
	chiedere,	*chiesi*,	*chiesto*,	to ask.
	ridere,	*risi*,	*riso*,	to laugh.
d	*rodere*,	*rosi*,	*roso*,	to gnaw.
	chiudere,	*chiusi*,	*chiuso*,	to shut.
	ardere,	*arsi*,	*arso*,	to burn.
	perdere,	*perdei*, or *persi*,	*perso*, or *perduto*,	to lose.
	sperdere,	*spersi*,	*sperso*,	to disperse.
	mordere,	*morsi*,	*morso*,	to bite.
	spendere,	*spesi*,	*speso*,	to spend.
	scindere,	*scinsi*,	*scinto*,	to sever.
	nascondere,	*nascosi*,	*nascoso*, or *nascosto*,	to hide.
	fondere,	*fusi*,	*fuso*,	to melt.
	esigere,	*esigei*,	*esatto*,	to exact.
	dirigere,	*diressi*,	*diretto*,	to direct.
	leggere,	*lessi*,	*letto*,	to read.
g	*affiggere*,	*affissi*,	*affitto*,	to affix, to stick up.
	affliggere,	*afflissi*,	*afflitto*,	to afflict.
	distruggere,	*distrussi*,	*distrutto*,	to destroy.
	piangere,	*piansi*,	*pianto*,	to weep.

g	*spegnere (spengere),	spensi,	spento,	to quench.
	cingere,	cinsi,	cinto,	to gird.
	stringere,	strinsi,	stretto,	to press.
	ungere,	unsi,	unto,	to anoint.
	spargere,	sparsi,	sparso,	to spread.
	ergere,	ersi,	erto, or eretto,	to erect.
	aspergere,	aspersi,	asperso,	to sprinkle.
	sorgere,	sorsi,	sorto,	to rise.
gu	estinguere,	estinsi,	estinto,	to extinguish.
l	*valére,	valsi,	valso, or valuto,	to be worth.
	*dolére,	dolsi,	doluto,	to pain or grieve.
	*volére,	volli,	voluto,	to wish.
	svellere,	svelsi,	svelto,	to uproot.
	espellere,	espulsi,	espulso,	to expel.
gli	*scegliere,	scelsi,	scelto,	to choose.
	*cogliere,	colsi,	colto,	to gather.
m	esprimere,	espressi,	espresso,	to express.
	redimere,	redensi, or redimei,	redento,	to redeem.
	assumere,	assunsi,	assunto,	to assume.
n	*rimanére,	rimasi,	rimaso, or rimasto,	to remain.
	*tenére,	tenni,	tenuto,	to hold or keep.
	*porre (ponere),	posi,	posto,	to put.
	scernere,	scersi, or scernei,	scerso, or scernuto,	to discern.
p	*sapére,	seppi,	saputo,	to know.
	rompere,	ruppi,	rotto,	to break.
r	*parére,	parvi, or parsi,	parso, or paruto,	to appear.
	correre,	corsi,	corso,	to run.
t	scuotere,	scossi,	scosso,	to shake.
	discutere,	discussi,	discusso,	to discuss.
	connettere,	connessi,	connesso,	to connect.
	mettere,	misi,	messo,	to put.
v	*bere (bevere),	bevvi, or bevei,	bevuto,	to drink.
	vivere,	vissi,	vissuto, or vivuto,	to live.
	scrivere,	scrissi,	scritto,	to write.
	muovere,	mossi,	mosso,	to move.
	piovere,	piovvi,	piovuto,	to rain.

v { *assolvere*, *assolsi*, *assolto*, to absolve.
{ *risolvere*, *risolsi*, *risoluto*, to resolve.

* All verbs marked thus have other irregularities besides the preterit and past participle. (See the following lessons.)

Exercise XXII.

The door is shut. The meat is cooked. Here she was born and grew up. Here she saw and conquered. I knew him when he was in France. How much have you spent? What profit have you drawn from it? He shone by reflected light.

To shut, *chiudere;* to cook, *cuocere;* to be born, *nascere;* to grow up, *crescere;* to see, *vedere;* to conquer, *vincere;* to know, *conoscere;* to spend, *spendere;* to draw, *trarre;* to shine, *splendere;* to reflect, *riflettere;* door, *porta;* meat, *carne;* how much, *quanto;* what profit, *che guadagno;* light, *luce.*

It rained all day. She moved me to tears. He has described the scene as it happened. She survived [to] her husband. They have succoured him. He ran over many countries. He laid very hard terms upon the conquered. Are you convinced? You will be expelled.

To rain, *piovere;* to move, *muovere;* to describe, *descrivere;* to happen, *ac-cadere;* to survive, *sopravvivere;* to succour, *soc-correre;* to run over, *per-correre;* to lay, *im-porre;* to conquer, *vincere;* to convince, *con-vincere;* to expel, *espellere;* to tears, *al pianto;* scene, *scena;* husband, *marito;* country, *paese;* term, *patto;* hard, *duro;* laid hard terms *upon* the conquered, turn, *to* the conquered; the conquered, pl.

In the year that Troy was burnt. He laughed when I asked [to] him where he had hid himself. She held the child grasped in her arms. The people shook off the yoke. She lived very happy with him. We all wept when we saw her smile. She smiled when she saw us weep. We were all confused and overcome. He betted for the black horse. We pitied him. He pitied us. They are gnawed

by envy. Are you disposed to forgive [to] him? He was surrounded by the enemies, who slew him without resistance.

To burn, *ardere;* to laugh, *ridere;* to ask, *chiedere;* to hide, *nascondere;* to hold, *tenere;* to grasp, *stringere;* to shake off, *scuotere;* to live, *vivere;* to weep, *piangere;* to smile, *sor-ridere;* to confuse, *con-fondere;* to overcome, *sopraf-fare;* to bet, *scom-mettere;* to pity, *com-piangere;* to gnaw, *rodere;* to dispose, *di-sporre;* to forgive, *perdonare;* to surround, *cingere;* to slay, *uccidere;* Troy, *Troia;* arm, *braccio;* yoke, *giogo;* envy, *invidia;* people, *popolo* (sing.); resistance, *difesa;* without, *senza;* happy, *felice.*

XXIII.—IRREGULAR VERBS.

SECOND CONJUGATION.

1. Besides the anomalies of the preterit and past participle, some verbs of the second conjugation have the following irregularities.

2. Verbs with an *a* preceding the termination *ere.*

Trarre, to draw (contr. of *traere*), act. ver. Ger. *traendo.* P. P. tratto.

Pr. Ind. traggo, *trai* or traggi, *trae* or tragge, traggiamo, *traete,* traggono.

Imp. *traeva.* Pret. trassi, *traesti,* etc. Fut. trarrò, etc. Cond. trarrei, etc.

Imper. *trai,* tragga, traggiamo, *traete,* traggano.

Sub. Pr. tragga, 3 pers.; traggiamo, traggiate, traggano. Imp. *traessi.*

Conjugate alike—*estrarre,* to extract; *contrarre,* to contract; *sottrarre,* to withdraw, etc.

3. Verbs with a *c* before *ere.*

Condurre, contr. of *conducere,* to lead. Ger. *conducendo.* P. P. *condotto,* active verb.

Pr. Ind. *conduco.* Imp. *conduceva.* Pret. condussi, *conducesti,* etc. Fut. condurrò, etc. Cond. condurrei, etc. Imp. *conduci.* Subj. Pr. *conduca.* Imp. *conducessi.*

(No irregularity, save in the preterit and participle past, and contraction in the infinitive, future, and conditional.)

So—*indurre,* to induce; *tradurre,* to translate; *sedurre,* to seduce; *introdurre,* to introduce, etc. etc.; *ridurre,* to reduce.

Dire (contr. of *dicere*), to say (active verb). Ger. *dicendo.* P. P. detto.*

Pr. Ind. *dico, dici,* or dì, *dice, diciamo,* dite, *dicono.* Imp. *diceva.*

Pret. dissi, *dicesti,* etc. Fut. dirò, etc. Cond. direi, etc.

Imper. dì, *dica, diciamo, dite, dicano.*

Subj. Pr. *dica,* 3 pers.; *diciamo, diciate, dicano.* Imp. *dicessi.*

So—*ridire,* to repeat; *disdire,* to unsay; *predire,* to foretell; *contraddire,* to contradict: *benedire,* to bless; *maledire,* to curse, etc.

Fare (contr. of *facere*), to do, or make. Ger. *facendo.* P. P. fatto.

Pr. Ind. fo, *or* faccio, fai, fa, facciamo, fate, fanno. Imp. *faceva.*

Pret. feci, *facesti,* etc. Fut. farò, etc. Cond. farei, etc.

Imper. fa, faccia, facciamo, fate, facciano.

Subj. Pr. faccia, 3 pers.; facciamo, facciate, facciano. Imp. *facessi.*

So—*rifare,* to do again; *disfare,* to undo; *confare,* to suit; *assuefare,* to accustom; *contraffare,* to counterfeit; *soddisfare,* to satisfy, etc.

Piacere, to please (neut. v.). Ger. *piacendo.* P. P. piaciuto.

* *Dire* and *Fare* are erroneously set down in the third and first conjugation nearly in all grammars.

Pr. Ind. piaccio, *piaci*, *piace*, piacciamo, *piacete*, piacciono. Imp. *piaceva*.

Pret. piacqui, *piacesti*, etc. Fut. *piacerò*. Cond. *piacerei*.

Imper. *piaci*, piaccia, piacciamo, *piacete*, piacciano.

Subj. Pr. piaccia, 3 pers.; piacciamo, piacciate, piacciano. Imp. *piacessi*.

So—*compiacere*, to please; *dispiacere*, to displease.
giacere, to lie down; *soggiacere*, to succumb.
tacere, to be silent. Some of the irregular persons of this verb may be written with one *c*, as *taciamo*, we are silent.

4. Verbs with a *d* before *ere*.

Cadere, to fall (neut. pass.). Ger. *cadendo*. P. P. *caduto*.

Pr. Ind. *cado*, or caggio, *cadi*, *cade*, *cadiamo*, or caggiamo, *cadete*, *cadono*, or caggiono. Imp. *cadeva*. Pret. caddi, *cadesti*, etc. Fut. cadrò, etc. Cond. cadrei, etc.

Imper. *cadi*, *cada*, or caggia, *cadiamo*, or caggiamo, *cadete*, *cadano*, or *caggiano*.

Subj. Pr. *cada*, or caggia, 3 pers.; *cadiamo*, or caggiamo, *cadiate*, or caggiate, *cadano*, or caggiano. Imp. *cadessi*.

So—*scadere*, to fall off; *accadere*, to happen; *ricadere*, to fall again, etc.

Vedere, to see (active verb). Ger. *vedendo*. P. P. *veduto*.

Ind. Pr. *vedo*, veggo, *or* veggio, *vedi*, *vede*, *vediamo*, or veggiamo, *vedete*, *vedono*, or veggono, or veggiono. Imp. *vedeva*. Fut. vedrò, etc. Cond. vedrei, etc.

Imper. *vedi*, *veda*, or vegga, or veggia, *vediamo*, or veggiamo, *vedete*, *vedano*, or veggano, or veggiano.

Subj. Pr. *veda*, vegga, *or* veggia, 3 pers.; *vediamo*, or veggiamo, *vediate*, or veggiate, *vedano*, veggano, or veggiano. Imp. *vedessi*.

So—*rivedere*, to see again; *avvedere*, to perceive; *divedere*,

travedere, etc.; *provvedere*, to provide; and *prevedere*, to foresee; are not contracted in the future and cond.; *provvederò*, *prevederei*, not *provvedrò*, etc.

Sedere, to sit (neut. verb.). Ger. *sedendo*. P. P. *seduto*.

Pr. Ind. siedo, seggo, *or* seggio, siedi, siede, *sediamo*, or seggiamo, *sedete*, siedono, or seggono, or seggiono. Imp. *sedeva*. Pret. *sedei*. Fut. *sederò*. Cond. *sederei*.

Imper. siedi, sieda, *or* segga, *sediamo*, or seggiamo, *sedete*, siedano, *or* seggano.

Subj. Pr. sieda, segga, *or* seggia, 3 pers.; *sediamo*, or seggiamo, *sediate*, or seggiate, siedano, seggano, seggiano. Imp. *sedessi*.

So—*risedere*, to reside; *presedere*, to preside; *possedere*, to possess; *soprassedere*, to temporise.

Exercise XXIII.

They drag him to death. Whilst they were dragging him to death, his friends came up and withdrew him from their fury. From this field I draw all my sustenance. He drew his sword and ran him through.

To drag, *trarre;* to come up, *sopraggiungere;* to withdraw, *sottrarre;* withdraw from (withdraw to); to draw, *trarre;* to run through, *trafiggere;* death, *morte;* whilst, *mentre;* fury, *furore;* field, *campo;* sustenance, *sostentamento;* sword, *spada*.

See what you have brought him to. His friends led him astray. They will guide you on the right way. The father's rigour produced its wonted effect. What sayest thou? Why doest thou not do what thou sayest? What he said he did. You have undone all the good you had done.

To see, *vedere;* to bring, *indurre;* to lead astray, *sedurre;* to guide, *condurre;* to produce, *produrre;* to say, *dire;* to do, *fare;* to undo, *disfare;* the right way, *il buon sentiero;* wonted effect, *usato effetto*.

Do it again and perhaps you will do it better. They do

everything in too great a hurry. They satisfy nobody. You will be satisfied. You were accustoming yourself to our climate. Do not contradict me. All the poor bless him. His work was blessed. Blessed be his holy name!

To do again, *rifare;* to satisfy, *soddisfare;* to accustom, *assuefare;* to contradict, *contraddire;* to bless, *benedire;* perhaps, *forse;* in too great a hurry, *con troppa fretta;* climate, *clima;* work, *lavoro;* holy name, *santo nome.*

Do what you please (pleases you). I like her (she pleases to me), but she does not like me. I like all your sisters. In what do I displease you? From the first moment that she pleased [to] me. For some time I was pleased with (of) his company. There lie our forefathers.

To like, *piacere;* (invert every sentence) to displease, *dispiacere;* to be pleased, *compiacersi;* to lie, *giacere;* sister, *sorella;* forefathers, *maggiori;* moment, *istante;* time, *tempo.*

He was silent for the rest of the day. Our warriors lay scattered about the battle-field. They sank overwhelmed by the heat of the day. They succumbed under (to) so many attacks. That very pure soul was silent. They will oblige you. Let them both be silent.

To be silent, *tacere;* to lie, *giacere;* to scatter, *spargere;* to sink, *cadere;* to overwhelm, *opprimere;* to succumb, *soggiacere;* to oblige, *compiacere;* the rest, *il rimanente;* warrior, *guerriero;* about, *per;* battle-field, *campo;* heat, *calore;* day, *giornata;* attack, *assalto;* pure, *onesto;* soul, *anima;* both, *entrambi.*

There were the ruins lying. Some were sitting, some lying down. Tell them that they may sit down (subj. pr.). He did not permit that he should sit down (subj. imp.).

To permit, *permettere;* to sit down, *sedere;* ruin, *rovina.*

Do as (what) I say, not as (what) I do. Do you see what I am doing? I see what you are doing. They are doing their duty. Some sit, some lie on the ground. If you sit

on that stool you will fall. These things happen sometimes. What has happened to you?

To see, *vedere;* I am doing (I do, or I *stay doing*); to fall, *cadere;* to happen, *accadere* (neut. pass.); duty, *dovere;* ground, *suolo;* stool, *scanno;* sometimes, *talvolta.*

It happened one day that the children were making a great noise. He bowed down his head and was silent. He was sitting on the ground and held his peace. The town is seated on the sea-shore. She who sitteth upon the waters. They sit on his left (hand understood).

To make, *fare;* to bow, *chinare;* to hold his peace, *tacere;* child, *fanciullo;* noise, *romore;* head, *fronte;* ground, *suolo;* town, *città;* sea-shore, *marina;* left, *sinistro;* on his left (at his left).

What will your father say? Shall I ever see her? They will provide all that is needful. They foresaw what soon afterwards happened. What will your friends do? I foresee great misfortunes. I never saw him again. We shall see.

To provide, *provvedere;* to be needful, *abbisognare;* to foresee, *prevedere;* to see again, *rivedere;* soon afterwards, *poco dopo;* misfortune, *sciagura;* never again (*non mai*), I never saw him again (I not him saw again).

Sit (thou) down and speak. I beg you to sit down. This is the road that leads to honours. This road will take me to town. What have I done? What didst thou say? What shall I do? They say the peace is made. Do you like flowers? Which of these pictures do you like best? I know whom you like.

To speak, *favellare;* to beg, *pregare;* to sit down (that you may sit down) (subj. pr.); to lead, to take, *condurre;* to like, *piacere.* Do you like flowers? (do flowers please to you?) (to you please the flowers?) I know, *so;* picture, *quadro;* road, *via,* or *strada;* peace, *pace;* flower, *fore;* best, *più.*

XXIV.—IRREGULAR VERBS.

SECOND CONJUGATION.

1. Verbs with a *g* before *ere*.

Spegnere (*spengere*), to quench (act.). Ger. *spegnendo*. P. P. spento.

Pr. Ind. spengo, *spegni*, *spegne*, *spegniamo*, *spegnete*, spengono.

Imp. *spegneva*. Pret. spensi, *spegnesti*, etc. Fut. *spegnerò*. Cond. *spegnerei*.

Imper. *spegni*, spenga, *spegniamo*, *spegnete*, spengano.

Subj. Pr. spenga, 3 pers.; *spegniamo*, *spegniate*, spengano. Imp. *spegnessi*.

Cingere, to gird; *tingere*, to die, etc. etc., are regular, all but the Pret. and P. P.; but some of their persons, besides the regular termination *cinge*, *tinge*, have also cigne, tigne.

2. Verbs with *l* before *ere*.

Valére, to be worth (neut.). Ger. valendo. P. P. *valuto*, or valso.

Pr. Ind. valgo, *or* vaglio, *vali*, *vale*, vagliamo, *valete*, valgono, *or* vagliono.

Imp. *valeva*. Pret. valsi, *valesti*, etc. Fut. varrò, etc. Cond. varrei, etc.

Imper. *vali*, valga, *or* vaglia, vagliamo, *valete*, valgano, *or* vagliano.

Subj. Pr. valga, *or* vaglia, 3 pers.; vagliamo, vagliate, valgano, *or* vagliano. Imp. *valessi*.

So—*prevalere*, to prevail; *equivalere*, to be equivalent, etc.

Dolére, to grieve (reflect.). Ger. *dolendo*. P. P. *doluto*.

Pr. Ind. dolgo, *or* doglio, duoli, duole, dogliamo, *dolete*, dolgono, *or* dogliono.

Imp. *doleva*. Pret. dolsi, *dolesti*, etc. Fut. dorrò, etc. Cond. dorrei, etc.

Imper. duoli, dolga, *or* doglia, dogliamo, *dolete*, dolgano, *or* dogliano.

Subj. Pr. dolga, *or* doglia, 3 pers.; dogliamo, dogliate, dolgano, *or* dogliano. Imp. *dolessi*.

So—*condolere*, to condole, etc.

Volere, to be willing. Ger. *volendo*. P. P. *voluto*.

Pr. Ind. voglio, vuoi, vuole, vogliamo, *volete*, vogliono.

Imp. *voleva*.

Pret. volli, *volesti*, etc. Fut. vorrò. Cond. vorrei.

Imper. Vogli, voglia, vogliamo, vogliate, vogliano.

Subj. Pr. voglia, 3 pers.; vogliamo, vogliate, vogliano.

Imp. *volessi*.

So—*disvolere*, to change one's mind.

Solére, to be wont. Ger. *solendo*. P. P. solito (a defective verb).

Pr. Ind. soglio, suoli, suole, sogliamo, *solete*, sogliono.

Imp. *soleva*.

Subj. Pr. soglia, 3 pers.; sogliamo, sogliate, sogliano.

Imp. *solessi*. (No other tenses.)

Svellere, to tear up. Ger. *svellendo*. P. P. svelto (act.).

Pr. Ind. svelgo, or *svello*, *svelli*, *svelle*, *svelliamo*, *svellete*, svelgono.

Imp. *svelleva*. Pret. svelsi, *svellesti*, etc. Fut. *svellerò*. Cond. *svellerei*.

Imper. *svelli*, svelga, *svelliamo*, *svellete*, svelgano.

Subj. Pr. svelga, or *svella*, *svelliamo*, *svelliate*, svelgano.

Imp. *svellessi*.

So—*divellere*.

3. Verbs with *gli* before *ere*.

Scegliere, *or* scerre, to choose (act.). Ger. *scegliendo*. P. P. scelto.

Pr. Ind. scelgo, *scegli*, *sceglie*, *scegliamo*, *scegliete*, scelgono.

Imp. *sceglieva*.

Pret. scelsi, *scegliesti*, etc. Fut. *sceglierò*. Cond. *sceglierei*.

Imper. *scegli*, scelga, *scegliamo*, *scegliete*, scelgano.

Subj. Pr. scelga, 3 pers.; *scegliamo, scegliate*, scelgano.
Subj. *scegliessi.*

Togliere, or torre, to take (act.). Ger. *togliendo.* P. P. tolto.
Pr. Ind. tolgo, or *toglio, togli, toglie, togliamo, togliete*, tolgono, or *togliono.*
Imp. *toglieva.* Pret. tolsi, *togliesti*, etc. Fut. *toglierò, or* torrò. Cond. *toglierei, or* torrei, etc. Imp. *togli*, tolga, or *toglia*, etc.
Subj. Pr. tolga, or *toglia*, 3 pers.; *togliamo, togliate*, tolgano, or *togliano.* Imp. *togliessi.*

(So—*cogliere*, to gather; *sciogliere*, to loosen, etc. etc.)

4. Verbs with *n* before *ere.*

Rimanére, to remain (neut. pass.). Ger. *rimanendo.* P. P. rimaso, *or* rimasto.
Pr. Ind. rimango, *rimani, rimane, rimaniamo, rimanete*, rimangono.
Imp. *rimaneva.* Pret. rimasi, *rimanesti*, etc. Fut. rimarrò, etc. Cond. rimarrei, etc.
Imper. *rimani*, rimanga, *rimaniamo, rimanete*, rimangano.
Subj. Pr. rimanga, 3 pers.; *rimaniamo, rimaniate*, rimangano.
Imp. *rimanessi.*

Porre, cont. of *ponere*, to put (act.). Ger. *ponendo.* P. P. posto.
Pr. Ind. pongo, *poni, pone, poniamo, ponete*, pongono.
Imp. *poneva.*
Pret. posi, *ponesti*, etc. Fut. porrò, etc. Cond. porrei, etc.
Imper. *poni*, ponga, *poniamo, ponete*, pongano.
Subj. Pr. ponga, 3 pers.; *poniamo, poniate*, pongano.
Imp. *ponessi.*

(So—*opporre, proporre, disporre, supporre, comporre*, etc.)

Tenere, to hold (act.). Ger. *tenendo.* P. P. *tenuto.*
Pr. Ind. tengo, tieni, tiene, *teniamo, tenete*, tengono.
Imp. *teneva.*

Pret. tenni, *tenesti*, etc. Fut. terrò, etc. Cond. terrei, etc.
Imper. tieni, tenga, *teniamo*, *tenete*, tengano.
Subj. Pr. tenga, 3 pers.; *teniamo*, *teniate*, tengano.
Imp. *tenessi*.

(So—*ottenere*, *mantenere*, contenere, *sostenere*, etc.)

5. Verbs with *p* before *ere*.

Sapére, to know. Ger. *sapendo*. P. P. *saputo*, (neut. act.) (analogous to *avere*).

Pr. Ind. so, sai, sa, sappiamo, *sapete*, sanno. Imp. *sapeva*.
Pret. seppi, *sapesti*, etc. Fut. saprò, etc. Cond. saprei, etc.
Imper. sappi, sappia, sappiamo, sappiate, sappiano.
Subj. Pr. sappia, 3 pers.; sappiamo, sappiate, sappiano.
Imp. *sapessi*.

6. Verbs with *r* before *ere*

Parére, to seem (neut.). Ger. *parendo*. P. P. *paruto*, *or* parso.

Pr. Ind. paio, *pari*, *pare*, *pariamo*, *or* paiamo, *parete*, paiono. Imp. *pareva*.
Pret. parvi, *paresti*, etc. Fut. parrò, etc. Cond. parrei, etc.
Imper. *pari*, paia, *pariamo*, *or* paiamo, *parete*, paiano.
Subj. Pr. paia, 3 pers.; *pariamo*, *or* paiamo, paiate, paiano. Imp. *paressi*.

7. Verbs with *t* before *ere*.

Potére, to be able (neut. act.). Ger. *potendo*. P. P. *potuto*.

Pr. Ind. posso, puoi, può, possiamo, *potete*, possono.
Imp. *poteva*.
Pret. *potei*. Fut. potrò, etc. Cond. potrei, etc. (No Imperative.)
Subj. Pr. possa, 3 pers.; possiamo, possiate, possano.
Imp. *potessi*.

8. Verbs with *v* before *ere*.

Dovére, to owe. Ger. *dovendo*. P. P. *dovuto*. (neut. act.)

Pr. Ind. devo, debbo, *or* deggio, devi, *or* dei, deve, *or* dee, dobbiamo, *or* deggiamo, *dovete*, debbono, *or* deggiono, *or* devono, *or* deono, *or* denno.

Imp. *doveva*. Pret. *dovetti*. Fut. dovrò. Cond. dovrei, etc. (No Imperative.)

Subj. Pr. deva, debba, *or* deggia, 3 pers.; dobbiamo, *or* deggiamo, dobbiate, *or* deggiate, debbano, or deggiano.

Imp. *dovessi*.

Bere, or *bevere*, to drink (act.). Ger. *bevendo*. P. P. *bevuto*.

Pr. Ind. *bevo*, *or* beo, *bevi*, *or* bei, *beve*, *or* bee, *beviamo*, *bevete*, etc.

Imp. *beveva*. Pret. *bevei*, *bevetti*, *or* bevvi, *bevesti*, etc. Fut. berò. Cond. berei, etc.

(The *v* may be suppressed in most persons.)

Exercise XXIV.

Do what thou canst. He who does what he can does what he ought (pres. ind.). He owes me all he knows. They owe me all they know. I put all my hope in thee. They always choose the best. I remained in that country for a month. I quench my thirst in the pure water.

Can, *potere*; ought, *dovere*; owe, *dovere*; to know, *sapere*; to put, *porre*; to choose, *scegliere*; to remain, *rimanere*; to quench, *spegnere*; hope, *speranza*; pure water, *acqua chiara*; thirst, *sete*.

What does thou complain of? I would if I could. Thou couldst if thou wouldst. She says yea and nay a hundred times a day. These horses are not worth a hundred crowns. Man proposes, and God disposes. They suppose it, but they do not know it.

To complain, *dolersi*; to will, *volere*; can, *potere*; to

say (yea), *volere;* to say (nay), *disvolere;* to be worth, *valere;* to propose, *proporre;* to dispose, *disporre;* to suppose, *supporre;* to know, *sapere;* hundred times a day, *cento volte il giorno;* crown, *scudo.*

I do not think they are (subj. pr.) worth so much. They always choose the worst. If they catch you, they kill you. What have they not taken from (to) me? He sustained his losses with great firmness. They maintain him at their own expense.

To think, *credere;* to choose, *scegliere;* to catch, *cogliere;* to kill, *ammazzare;* to take, *togliere;* to sustain, *sostenere;* to maintain, *mantenere;* loss, *perdita;* firmness, *fermezza;* expense, *spesa;* at their own expense, *a proprie spese*

She never seemed to me so beautiful. They must not repent. As soon as I knew it, I complained of it. My head aches. He has a tooth-ache. The tongue strikes where the tooth aches. More cross than he is wont. They are wont to travel in summer.

To seem, *parere;* must, *dovere;* repent, *pentirsi;* to know, *sapere;* to complain, *dolersi;* to ache, *dolere;* my head aches (to me aches the head); he has a tooth-ache (to him ache the teeth); to strike, *battere;* to be wont, *solere;* to travel, *viaggiare;* head, *capo;* tooth, *dente;* tongue, *lingua;* summer, *estate;* cross, *burbero;* more than, *più che non.*

Know (thou) that I never drink water. She is worth more than (of) all the gold in (of) the world, if she loves me. Every one (all) knew that they loved each other. What dost thou want? What do you want? What do those rogues want? Remember (thou of) me and love me. Fare (thee) well.

To know, *sapere;* to drink, *bere;* to love, *voler bene;* to love each other, *volersi bene;* to want, *volere;* to remember, *ricordarsi di;* to fare well, *star bene;* rogue, *birbante;* water, *acqua.*

I cannot dance. I cannot walk. Walk if you can. Play if you can. Recognise me if thou canst. I 'll do all I know and can. We cannot, or one cannot, always do what we wish, or one wishes. We never, or one never, knows what we can do till we try. Do (you) not be willing to deny it to me.

To have power, *potere;* to have the skill, *sapere;* to dance, *ballare;* to walk, *camminare;* to play, *sonare;* to recognise, *riconoscere* or *ravvisare;* to try, *provare;* to be willing, *volere;* to deny, *negare;* till, *finchè non.*

XXV.—IRREGULAR VERBS.

THIRD CONJUGATION.

1. The following are the only regular verbs of the third conjugation:—

avvertire,	to warn.	*pentire,*	to repent.
bollire,	to boil.	*sentire,*	to feel.
dormire,	to sleep.	*servire,*	to serve.
fuggire,	to fly,	*sortire,*	to sally out.
partire,	to depart.	*vestire,*	to clothe.

(with their compounds.)

2. Many verbs of this conjugation have the present in *isco.*

Ex. *unire,* to unite.

Pr. Ind. unisco, unisci, unisce, *uniamo, unite,* uniscono.
Imper. unisci, unisca, *uniamo, unite,* uniscano.
Subj. Pr. unisca, 3 pers.; *uniamo, uniate,* uniscano.

3. The following verbs have both the regular termination and that in *isco:*—

abborrire,	to abhor.	*muggire,*	to bellow.
inghiottire,	to swallow.	*nutrire,*	to nourish.
languire,	to languish.	*ruggire,*	to roar.
mentire,	to lie.	*sorbire,*	to sip.

(with their compounds.)

4. *Seguire*, to follow, may take an *i* wherever the accent falls upon the *e*.

Pr. Ind. sieguo, siegui, siegue, *seguiamo*, *seguite*, sieguono.
Imper. siegui, siegua, etc. Subj. Pr. siegua, etc.

(So—*proseguire*, to continue; *inseguire*, to pursue, etc.)

5. *Salire*, to ascend. Ger. *salendo*. P. P. *salito* (neut.).

Pr. Ind. salgo, *sali*, *sale*, sagliamo, *salite*, salgono.
Imp. *saliva*.
Pret. *salii*, *or* salsi, *salisti*, etc. Fut. *salirò*
Cond. *salirei*.
Imper. *sali*, salga, etc.
Subj. P. salga, 3 pers., etc., analogous to *valere*.

(So—*assalire*, to assail; *risalire*, to reäscend, etc.)

6. *Apparire* has, besides the termination in *isco*, some persons analogous to *parere*. Ger. apparendo. P. P. apparso.

Pr. Ind. appaio, *appari*, *appare*, *appariamo*, *apparite*, appaiono.
Imp. *appariva*. Pret. apparvi, *apparii*, or apparsi, *appariisti*, etc.
Fut. *apparirò*. Cond. *apparirei*.
Imper. *appari*, appaia, etc. Subj. Pr. appaia, etc.
Imp. *apparissi*.

(So—*sparire*, to disappear, etc.)

7. *Morire*, to die. Ger. *morendo*. P. P. morto (neut. pass.).

Pr. Ind. muoio, *or* muoro, or *moro*, muori, muore, *moriamo*, *morite*, muoiono, *or* muorono.
Imp. *moriva*. Pret. *morii*. Fut. morrò, or *morirò*.
Cond. morrei, or *morirei*.
Imper. muori, or *mori*, muoia, *or* muora, *moriamo*, etc.
Subj. Pr. *muoia*, or *muora*, 3 pers., etc. Imp. *morissi*.

8. *Venire*, to come. Ger. *venendo*. P. P. *venuto* (neut. pass., analogous to *tenere*).

Pr. Ind. vengo, vieni, viene, *veniamo*, *venite*, vengono.
Imp. *veniva*. Pret. venni, *venisti*, etc. Fut. verrò.

Cond. verrei.
Imper. vieni, venga, *veniamo, venite,* vengano.
Subj. Pr. venga, 3 pers.; *veniamo, veniate,* vengano.
Imp. *venissi.*

(So—*svenire,* to faint; *convenire,* to agree, etc.)

9. *Udire,* to hear. Ger. *udendo.* P. P. *udito* (act.).
Pr. Ind. odo, odi, ode, *udiamo, udite,* odono. Fut. udrò, or *udirò.* Cond. udrei, or *udirei.*
Imp. odi, oda, *udiamo, udite,* odano.
Subj. Pr. oda, 3 pers.; *udiamo, udiate,* odano (regular in all other tenses).

10. *Uscire,* to go out. Ger. *uscendo.* P. P. *uscito* (neut. pass.).
Pr. Ind. esco, esci, esce, *usciamo, uscite,* escono.
Imper. esci, esca, *usciamo, uscite,* escano.
Subj. Pr. esca, 3 pers.; *usciamo, usciate,* escano (regular in all other tenses).

(So—*riuscire* to succeed.)

11. *Cucire,* to sew, takes an *i* in all terminations in *o* and *a.*
Pr. Ind. cuci-o, *cuc-i, cuc-e, cuc-iamo, cuc-ite, cuci-ono.*
Imper. *cuc-i,* cuci-a, etc.
Subj. Pr. cuci-a, etc. (otherwise regular).

(So—*scucire, sdrucire,* to unsew, to rip.)

12. *Empire,* to fill. Ger. *empiendo.* P. P. *empito.*
Pr. Ind. empio, *empi,* empie, *empiamo, empite,* empiono.
Imper. *empi,* empia, etc. Subj. Pr. empia, 3 pers., etc. Otherwise regular. The irregular persons are from *empiere.*

(So—*compire, adempire,* to fulfil, etc.)

13. *Aprire,* to open.
Pret. *aprii, or* apersi, *apristi,* etc. P. P. aperto (otherwise regular).

(So—*coprire,* to cover; *offrire,* to offer; *soffrire,* to suffer, etc.)

14. *Istruire,* to instruct. Pret. istrussi, or *istruii.* P. P. *istrutto* or *istruito* (otherwise regular).

15. *Seppellire.* All regular but P. P. sepolto, or *seppellito.*

(*Dire*, contr. of *dicere*, belongs to the second conjugation. See there.)

Exercise XXV.

She fainted when she saw him. She faints every time she sees him. Let them come to-morrow. He goes and comes every week. They go out together every morning. This kind of life does not suit me. They agreed on (at) these conditions

To faint, *svenire;* to see, *vedere;* to come, *venire;* to go, *andare;* to go out, *uscire;* to suit, *convenire;* to agree, *convenire;* every time, *ogni volta;* to-morrow, *domani;* together, *insieme;* morning, *mattina;* week, *settimana;* kind, *modo;* condition, *patto.*

A thousand fierce doubts assail me. He was twenty years old when he ascended (on) the throne. They sew morning and evening. Out of the water they die. He dies like a Christian. Do not go on; I understand you. Finish thy letter and send it to the post.

To assail, *assalire;* to ascend, *salire;* to sew, *cucire;* to die, *morire;* to go on, *proseguire;* to understand, *capire;* to finish, *finire;* to send, *mandare;* doubt, *dubbio;* fierce, *fiero;* he was twenty years old (he had twenty years); water, *acqua;* out, *fuori;* like a Christian, *da Cristiano;* letter, *lettera;* post, *posta.*

The ghost of his grandmother appeared to him. Ghosts appear at midnight. Leave (thou) me, fearful ghost; depart, vanish! Here he was born, here he died, and was buried. They are long since dead and buried. Do not forsake me when I die.

To appear, *apparire;* to leave, *lasciare;* to depart, *uscire;* to vanish, *sparire;* to be born, *nascere;* to die, *morire;* to bury, *seppellire;* to forsake, *abbandonare;* ghost, *ombra;* grandmother, *nonna;* midnight, *mezza-*

notte; fearful, *orribile;* here, *quì;* long since, *da gran tempo.*

The door is open. This is the house they have offered to me. This happened before gunpowder was (subj. imp.) discovered. Columbus discovered America towards the end of the fifteenth century. The angels hid their face with their wings. Open the door.

To open, *aprire;* to offer, *offrire;* to happen, *avvenire;* to discover, *scoprire;* to hide, *coprire;* door, *porta,* or *uscio;* house, *casa;* before, *prima che;* gunpowder, *polvere;* Columbus, *Colombo;* end, *fine;* century, *secolo;* towards, *verso;* angel, *angelo;* face, *volto;* wing, *ala;* hid their face (to themselves hid the face).

I must go out. You must hear me. They must hear me. Hear (thou) me. The whole world shall hear it. Those birds come out only by night. After sunset they will come out.

To go or come out, *uscire;* I must go out: it is necessary that I go out (subj. pr.); to hear, *udire;* you must hear: it is necessary that you hear (subj. pr.); it is necessary, *bisogna;* the whole world, *il mondo intero;* bird, *uccello;* only (not but), *non—che;* night, *notte;* after sunset, *a sera.*

We do not suceeed because we do not try. If they try they will succeed. He tries, but does not succeed. I do not think that he hears (subj. pr.) you. If he heard (subj. imp.) you he would answer. Let them answer if they hear (ind. pr.). Answer (thou) if thou hearest.

To succeed, *riuscire;* to try, *provare;* to think, *credere;* to hear, *udire;* to answer, *rispondere.*

Let them fulfil their duties. A ghost appears to me every night, which fills me with (of) terror. Come (thou), let us fly together. The Romans die and fly not. He who flies conquers. Help (thou) me or I die. Save us or we die.

To fulfil, *adempire;* to fill, *empire;* to come, *venire;* to

fly, *fuggire;* to die, *morire;* to conquer, *vincere;* to help, *soccorrere;* to save, *salvare;* duty, *dovere;* night, *notte;* terror, *terrore.*

They do not succeed now as they did (succeed) once. The way is open if thou darest. What way is closed for (to) a man who dares? How many die without hope. These poor girls fall into consumption. When he sees me he turns pale.

To succeed, *riuscire;* to dare, *ardire;* to close, *chiudere;* to fall into consumption, *intisichire;* to turn pale, *impallidire;* now, *ora;* once, *una volta;* way, *via;* how many, *quanti;* hope, *speranza;* girl, *ragazza;* poor, *povero.*

XXVI.—DEFECTIVE VERBS.

1. *Angere*, to afflict.

Pr. Ind. *ange*, he afflicts. (No other tense or person.)

2. *Algere*, to freeze.

Pret. alsi, algesti, etc. (No other tense.)

3. *Arrogere*, to add. Ger. *arrogendo*. P. P. arroso, *or* arroto.

Pr. Ind. *arroge*, he adds. Pret. arrose, he added. (No other tense.)

4. *Calére*, to care (used impersonally with dative pronouns).

Ex. *Mi cale*, I care; *ti cale*, thou carest, etc.

Pr. Ind. *cale*. Imp. *caleva*. Pret. calse.

Subj. Pr. caglia. Imp. *calesse* (in compound tenses conjugated with *essere*, as *mi è caluto*, I have cared).

5. *Colere*, to worship, *or* revere.

Pr. Ind. *colo*, I revere; *cole*, he reveres. (No other person or tense.)

6. *Estollere*, to raise, *or* exalt.
Pr. Ind. *estolle*, he raises. (No other tense or person.)
7. *Fiedere*, to smite. Ger. *fiedendo*.
Pr. Ind. *fiedo, fiedi, fiede;* pl. *fiedono*. Imp. *fiedeva*.
Pret. *fiedei*.
Subj. Pr. *fieda*, etc. Imp. *fiedessi*, etc.
8. *Gire*, to go. P. P. *gito*.
Pr. Ind. *gite*, you go. Imp. *giva*, etc. Pret. *gii, gisti*, etc.
Fut. *girò*, etc. Cond. *girei*, etc.
Imper. *giamo*, let us go. Subj. Pr. *giamo*, we may go; *giate*, you may go.
Imperf. *gissi*, etc. (otherwise defective).
9. *Ire*, to go. P. P. *ito*.
Pr. Ind. *ite*, you go. Imp. *iva, ivi, iva;* pl. *ivano*.
Fut. *iremo, irete, iranno*. Imper. *ite*, go ye.
10. *Licere*, or *lecere*, to be lawful.
Pr. Ind. *lice*, or *lece*, it is lawful. (No other tense or person.)
11. *Molcere*, to soothe. Ger. *molcendo*.
Pr. Ind. *molci*, thou soothest; *molce*, he soothes.
Imp. *molceva*, etc.
Subj. Im. *molcessi*, etc. (Otherwise defective.)
12. *Olire*, to be fragrant.
Imp. Ind. *oliva*, etc.; plur. *olivano*. (No other tense.)
13. *Solére*, to be wont. (See Irregular Verbs, second conjugation.)
14. *Riedere*, to return.
Pr. Ind. *riedi*, thou returnest; *riede*, he returns; *riedono*, they return.
Subj. Pr. *rieda*, 3 pers.; plu. *riedano*. (Otherwise defective.)
15. *Tangere*, to touch.
Pr. Ind. *tange*, he touches. (No other tense or person.)
16. *Urgere*, to urge. Ger. *urgendo*.
Pr. Ind. *urge*, he presses. Imp. *urgeva;* plur. *urgevano*.
Subj. Im. *urgesse, urgessero*.

Exercise XXVI.

I usually go to bed at twelve. They usually dine at six. I used to ride morning and afternoon. I do not care for him. I have your happiness at heart. Take to heart the welfare of your children. I did not think you cared (subj. imp.) so much for it.

Usually to do a thing, *solere fare una cosa;* to go to bed, *andare a letto;* to dine, *pranzare;* to use, *solere;* to ride, *cavalcare;* to care for, *calere di;* to have, or take to heart, *calere;* to care for, *calere di.* Ex. I care for you, *mi cale di voi;* you care for me, *vi cale di me;* morning, *mattina;* afternoon, *dopo pranzo;* happiness, *felicità;* well-being, *bene;* child, *figlio;* so much, *tanto.*

How every flower sweetly smelt. Your misery does not concern me. I never cared for thy love. Do not think that I care for it. Who assuages, oh! poor prisoner, thy gloomy cares? Thus does he raise his great forehead and his great horns. Men are wont sooner to forget favours than injuries.

To smell, *olire;* to concern, *tangere;* to care, *calere;* to think, *credere;* to assuage, *molcere;* to raise, *estollere;* to be wont, *solere;* to forget, *dimenticare;* how, *come;* flower, *fiore;* sweetly, *soavemente;* misery, *miseria;* love, *amore;* never, *non—mai;* poor, *misero;* prisoner, *prigione;* gloomy, *tetro;* care, *cura;* thus, *così;* his great forehead, *la gran fronte;* his great horns, *le gran corna;* favour, *beneficio;* injury, *ingiuria.*

XXVII.—PREPOSITIONS.

1. The Prepositions have many idiomatic peculiarities, only to be learned by practice and example.

Di,—of.

Examples.

la casa di *mio padre*,	my father's house.
la corona di *ferro*,	the iron crown.
è ora di *pranzo*,	it is dinner-time.
non mi fido di *lui*,	I do not trust him.
domandano di *voi*,	they ask *for* you.
partii di *Parigi*,	I set out *from* Paris.
vengo di *casa*,	I come *from* home.
di *giorno* in *giorno*,	*from* day *to* day.
cristalli di *Boemia*,	Bohemian glasses.
vino di *Sciampagna*,	Champagne wine.
la strada di *Parigi*,	the road *to* Paris.
carico d' *onori*,	loaded *with* honours.
dotato di *talenti*,	gifted *with* talents.
punito di *morte*,	punished *with* death.
accusato di *furto*,	charged *with* theft.
provveduto di *denari*,	supplied *with* money.
ferito di *spada*,	wounded *with a* sword.
mi maraviglio di *voi*,	I am surprised *at* you.
mi fece d' *occhio*,	he winked *at* me.
gli feci di *cappello*,	I took off my hat *to* him.
levatevelo di *dosso*,	take it off *from* you.
vive di *legumi*,	he lives *on* vegetables.
toglietevelo di *testa*,	get it *out of* your head.
viaggia di *notte*,	he travels *by* night.
più bella di *voi*,	handsomer *than* you.
godo di *vedervi*,	I rejoice *to* see you.
avviene di *rado*,	it seldom happens.
parlò di *forza*,	he spoke forcibly.
2. *A*, or *ad*,—to, *or* at.	
andiamo a *Roma*,	we go *to* Rome.
date a *Cesare*,	give *to* Cæsar.
venne a *trovarmi*,	he came *to* see me.
l' ho mandato a *cercare*,	I have sent to look *for* him.
avvicinati a *me*,	come near me.
si appoggia al *muro*,	he leans *against the* wall.
dirimpetto all' *ospedale*,	opposite *to* the hospital.
pon mente a *ciò ch' io dico*,	mind what I say.
furon tagliati a *pezzi*,	they were cut to pieces.
vanno a *due* a *due*,	they go two *by* two.
l' ho imparato a *mente*,	I have learned it *by* heart.
muoiono a *migliaia*,	they die *by* thousands.

state all' *erta*,	be *on the* watch.
camminano al *buio*,	they walk *in the* dark.
non opro a *caso*,	I do not act *by* chance.
stette a *bocca aperta*,	he stood *with* open mouth.
cammina a *capo chino*,	he walks *with* downcast head.
l' ho letto alla *sfuggita*,	I have run over it.
lo fece all' *impensata*,	he did it thoughtlessly.
va tutto alla *peggio*,	all goes for the worst.
una scala a *chiocciola*,	a winding staircase.
è fatto a *vite*,	it is made screw-wise.
vestita alla *Francese*,	dressed *in the* French fashion.
battello a *vapore*,	steam-ship.
bastimento a *vela*,	sailing vessel.
carico a *mitraglia*,	loaded *with* grape-shot.
sempre colla spada alla *mano*,	always sword *in* hand.
dipinto a *maraviglia*,	painted wonderfully well.
lo fece a *mia richiesta*,	he did it *by* my request.
se lo ebbe a *male*,	he took it ill.

3. *Da*,—from, *or* by.

partii da *Parigi*,	I set out *from* Paris.
vengo da *casa*,	I come *from* home.
lontano dalla *patria*,	far *from* one's country.
lodato da *tutti*,	praised *by* every one.
discordo da *voi*,	I differ *with* you.
dipende dal *marito*,	she depends *on* her husband.
guardatevi da *lui*,	beware *of* him.
venite da *me*.	come *to* me (to my house).
passate da *casa mia*,	pass *by* (or come *to*) my house.
da *noi non si fa*,	this is not done *amongst* us.
l' ho fatto da *me*,	I have done it *by* myself.
vi parlo da *amico*,	I speak to you *as a* friend.
un cappello da *signore*,	a hat *fit for a* gentleman.
una giovane da *marito*,	a girl *in* a marriageable age.
datemi da *pranzo*,	give me something *for* dinner
la fanciulla dai *capelli biondi*,	the girl *with* fair hair.
l'errare è da *uomo*,	to err is human.
dite da *burla o* da *vero?*	do you speak *in* jest or *in* earnest?
avete niente da *mangiare?*	have you anything *to* eat?
non ho da *servirvi*,	I have not *the means to* serve you.
egli non è da *temere*,	he is not *to* be feared.
che c' è da *ridere?*	what is there *to* laugh at?
è fuggito da *quella parte*,	he ran that way.
ditegliele da *parte mia*,	tell it him *in* my name.

avete carta da *scrivere?*	have you writing paper?
è tutta roba da *vendere,*	all this is *to* be sold.
è una scena da *commedia,*	it is a scene *for* a comedy.
non son cose da *pari vostro,*	these are not things *for* one like you.
vi sarebbe che dire da *ambe le parti,*	there is something to say *on* both sides.

4. *Per*,—for, *or* by.

l' ho fatto per *voi,*	I have done it *for* you (for your sake).
lo fa per *farmi dispetto,*	he does it *to* (*in order to*) spite me.
ho viaggiato per *Francia,*	I have travelled *about* in France.
l' ho detto per *ischerzo,*	I have said it *as* a jest.
ciò che per *lui si è fatto,*	what has been done *by* him.
diteglielo per *parte mia,*	tell it him *in* my name.
fu lasciato per *morto,*	he was left *as* dead.
è venuta per *la posta,*	it came *by* post.
passa per *onest' uomo,*	he is thought to be an honest man.
che idee vi passano pel *capo?*	what ideas come *into* your head?
andate pei *fatti vostri,*	go *about* your business.
viaggia per *terra,*	he travels *by* land.
sto per *partire,*	I am *about to* set out.
lo scontrai per *via,*	I met him *on* the road, *by* the way.
non lo conto per *nulla,*	I reckon him *as* nothing.
per *me ve lo cedo,*	*as for* me I give it up to you.
si spaccia per *ricco,*	he gives himself out *as* a rich man.
lo conto per *nulla,*	I reckon him *as* nothing.
piovve per *tre giorni,*	it rained *for* three days.
per quanto *vi affatichiate,*	*however* you may exert yourself.

5. *Con*,—with, or by.

ha fatto pace col *nemico,*	he has made peace *with* the enemy.
è uscita col *servo,*	she is gone out *with* her servant.
lo fo con *piacere,*	I do it *with* pleasure.
leggo cogli *occhiali,*	I read *with* spectacles.
si distingue coi *suoi talenti,*	he distinguishes himself *by* his talents.
l' ottiene colla *pazienza,*	he obtains it *by* his patience.
supplisce col *coraggio,*	he makes up *by* courage.

6. *In*,—in, into, *or* at.

dimora in *città,*	he lives *in* town.
avvenne in *Marzo,*	it happened *in* March.
è andato in *campagna,*	he is gone *into the* country.
è andato in *Francia,*	he is gone *to* France.
il pranzo è in *tavola,*	dinner is *on the* table.
è caduto in *terra,*	he is fallen *to the* ground

furon fatti in *pezzi*,	they were cut *to* pieces.
la flotta è in *mare*,	the fleet is *at* sea.
mettetevelo in *tasca*,	put it *in* your pocket.
ha il cappello in *testa*,	he has his hat *on*.
con questo anello in *dito*,	with this ring *on* my finger.
meglio è fringuello in *man che* in *frasca tordo*,	better a finch *in* the hand than a thrush *in* the bush (a bird in the hand is worth two in the bush).
tutti gli occhi eran fissi in *lui*,	all eyes were fixed upon him.
morto in *età di venti anni*,	died *at* the age of twenty.
in *punta di piedi*,	*on* tiptoe.
non ho denari in dosso,	I have no money *upon* me.

7. *Tra*, or *fra*,—among *or* between.

fra *due muri*,	*between* two walls.
tra *il quinto dì e il sesto*,	*between* the fifth and sixth day.
tra *i fiori e l' erba*,	*amongst* the flowers and the grass.
fra *tre giorni*,	*within* three days.
dissi fra *me*,	I said *within* myself.
lo incontrò fra *via*,	she met him *on* the way.
tra *viva e morta*,	half-alive half-dead.
tra *l' una cosa e l' altra io non sapeva che fare*,	*what with* one thing and the other, I did not know what to do.

8. *Su*, or *sopra*,—on, upon, above.

la città è posta sul *monte*,	the town is situate *on* the hill.
la stimo sovra *ogni altra cosa*,	I value her *above* all things.
andò su per *la montagna*,	he went *up* to the mountain.
vengono su per *le scale*,	they are coming *up the* staircase.
col peso in sulle *spalle*,	with the burden *on* his shoulders.
sul *far del giorno*,	*at* break of day.
in sull' *imbrunire*,	*at* dusk.
memorie sulla *Rivoluzione Francese*; *or*, intorno alla *Rivoluzione Francese*,	memoirs *on the* French Revolution.

9. Other prepositions.

senza *danaro*,	*without* money.
senza di *me*,	*without* me.
dopo *pranso*,	after dinner.
dopo di *me*,	after me.
prima di *me*,	*before* me (in time).
avanti di *me*,	*before* me (in my presence).
innanzi a *me*,	
prima di *tutto*,	*before* all (in the first place).

prima di *credere*,	*before* believing.
prima dell' *alba*,	*before* dawn.
avanti l' *alba*,	
innanzi l' *alba*,	
incontro a *me*,	*against* me.
contro di *me*,	
contro il *nemico*,	*against the* enemy.
contro al *nemico*,	
dietro la *porta*,	*behind the* door.
dietro alla *porta*,	
entro le *mura*,	*within the* walls.
dentro alle *mura*,	
in mezzo alla *strada*,	*in the middle of the* street.
in mezzo della *strada*,	
accanto al *letto*,	*beside the* bed.
allato al *marito*,	*beside her* husband.
vicino a *casa*,	*near* home.
presso il *fuoco*,	*near the* fire.
presso al *fuoco*,	
presso del *fuoco*,	
verso me,	*towards* me.
verso a me,	
verso di me,	
di là dalle *Alpi*,	*beyond the* Alps.
di quà dal *Reno*,	*this side the* Rhine.
oltre a *ciò*,	*besides* this.
più della *metà*,	*more than* half.
vicino al *mare*,	*near the* sea, on the sea, etc.
presso al *mare*,	
in riva al *mare*,	
lungo il *fiume*,	*along the* river.
fino a *Roma*,	*as far as* Rome.
fino a *Natale*,	*until* Christmas.
fuor *tutti i nostri lidi*,	beyond all our shores.

Exercise XXVII.

We expect him from day to day. What am I charged with? I write with steel pens. Trust me. She had on her head a wreath of roses. Come to me at the midnight hour. He was wounded by a hundred thrusts. A friend of the house.

To expect, *aspettare;* day, *giorno;* to charge, *accusare;* to write, *scrivere;* pen, *penna;* steel, *acciaio;* to trust, *fidarsi;* wreath, *ghirlanda;* rose, *rosa;* to come, *venire;* midnight, *mezzanotte;* hour, *ora;* to wound, *ferire;* thrust, *punta;* friend, *amico;* house, *casa.*

Tell him to come at noon. Are we far from London? He was forsaken by all his friends. I have learned it by heart. He behaves as a gentleman. Give me some supper. I have some money to give you.

To tell, *dire;* to come, *venire;* noon, *mezzogiorno;* far, *lontano;* London, *Londra;* to forsake, *abbandonare;* to learn, *imparare;* heart, *mente;* to behave, *trattare;* supper, *cena;* money, *danaro;* gentleman, *galantuomo.*

Do not treat him in this manner. Treat him with kindness. You will know him by his deeds. He has succeeded by perseverance. House to let. Buy a saddle-horse. He comes with his brother. All this is for sale. He died for his country.

To treat, *trattare;* manner, *modo;* kindness, *bontà;* to know, *conoscere;* to succeed, *riuscire;* perseverance, *perseveranza;* deed, *azione;* house, *casa;* to let, *affittare;* to buy, *comprare;* saddle, *sella;* horse, *cavallo;* to come, *venire;* brother, *fratello;* all this is, *è tutta roba;* to sell, *vendere;* to die, *morire;* one's country, *patria.*

He comes to town to-morrow. We go to the country in autumn. The English are strong by land and sea. Take this purse and put it in your pocket. All my friends are in town. Tell it him in my name. You cannot go by water.

Town, *città;* to-morrow, *domani;* country, *campagna;* autumn, *autunno;* English, *Inglese;* strong, *forte;* land, *terra;* sea, *mare;* purse, *borsa;* pocket, *tasca;* in my name (on my part); water, *acqua.*

He fell into the sea. Go about your business. All evil

does not come to hurt. I have taken a house for a year. We were walking about the town. I have met him in the streets. They paid five crowns each. He earned two crowns a day.

To fall, *cadere;* business, *fatti* (to be used in plur.); evil, *male;* to hurt, *nuocere;* to take, *prendere;* to walk, *passeggiare;* town, *città;* street, *strada;* to meet, *incontrare;* to pay, *pagare;* crown, *scudo;* each, *uno,* or *ciascuno;* to earn, *guadagnare;* day, *giorno.*

How dare you look me in the face? Help me with your advice. Much did he achieve by his wisdom and by his valour. I read for my own amusement. What strange thoughts run through my mind! Do it for heaven's sake!

To dare, *osare;* to look, *guardare;* face, *faccia;* to help, *aiutare;* advice, *consiglio;* to achieve, *oprare;* wisdom, *senno;* valour, *mano;* to read, *leggere;* amusement, *divertimento;* strange, *strano;* thought, *pensiero;* to run, *correre;* mind, *mente;* sake, *amore.*

He is illustrious by birth. He is ennobled by his talents. He is famous for his high deeds. I come on your account. I cannot feign even in jest. Wait for me in the garden. He is known as a rogue.

Illustrious, *illustre;* birth, *nascita;* ennobled, *fatto illustre;* talent, *talento;* famous, *chiaro;* high, *grande;* deed, *azioni;* to come, *venire;* on your account (for your sake); sake, *amore;* to feign, *fingere;* jest, *gioco;* to wait for, *aspettare;* garden, *giardino;* rogue, *mariuolo.*

I have said it as a jest. You advise me as a true friend. I wish to speak to you *tête-à-tête.* He does not act as an honest man. You will learn the rest by practice. You will do it at your ease. The world goes always from bad to worse.

Jest, *scherzo;* to advise, *consigliare;* to wish, *bramare;* tête-à-tête, *da solo a solo;* to act, *agire;* honest man,

uomo dabbene ; to learn, *imparare ;* rest, *resto ;* practice, *pratica ;* ease, *agio,* or *comodo ;* world, *mondo ;* always, *sempre ;* bad, *male ;* worse, *peggio.*

He will come within three days. Let this be said between us. Amongst friends one can speak freely. They come to us (at our house) every evening. Go to him. We dine at the Marchioness's this evening. He wavers between hope and fear. He will come without doubt. The body lay without feeling and life. I will do nothing without you. Far from the eyes, far from the heart.

To come, *venire ;* day, *giorno ;* to say, *dire ;* can, *potere ;* to speak, *parlare ;* freely, *liberamente ;* to us (at our house), (as in French, *chez nous*), *chez da ;* to dine, *pranzare ;* marchioness, *marchesa ;* this evening, *stasera ;* to waver, *ondeggiare ;* hope, *speranza ;* fear, *timore ;* without doubt, *senza dubbio,* or *senz' altro ;* body, *corpo ;* to lie, *giacere ;* feeling, *senso ;* life, *vita ;* to do, *fare ;* far, *lontano ;* eye, *occhio ;* heart, *cuore.*

XXVIII.—ADVERBS.

1. Many adjectives become adverbs by adding *mente* to their termination in *a* or *e.*

Example.

lo vedo chiara-mente,	I see it *clearly.*
visse felice-mente,	he lived *happily.*
fu trattato crudel-mente,	he was treated *cruelly.*

2. Some adjectives may be used adverbially.

Example.

parlate chiaro,	speak *plainly.*
vivete felice,	live happily.

3. Some adjectives and nouns become adverbs by the addition of a preposition.

Example.

avviene di rado,	it happens *seldom.*
l' ho fatto in fretta,	I have done it *hurriedly.*
osservatelo pel minuto,	look at it *minutely.*

4. The following adverbs are in frequent use:—

non vi affaticate tanto,	do not exert yourself *so much.*
voi studiate troppo,	you study *too much.*
spende molto,	he spends *a great deal.*
guadagna poco,	he earns *little.*
mi preme assai,	I care *much* for it.
l' ho aspettato abbastanza,	I have waited for him *long enough.*
non ci penso più,	I think no *more* of it.
non potreste darmi meno,	you could not give me *less.*
non posso dirvi di più,	I cannot tell you *more.*
non posso far di meno,	I can do no *less.*
potrei parlar meglio?	could I speak *better?*
che può avvenirmi di peggio?	what can happen to me *worse?*
il malato va di bene in meglio,	the patient goes *better and better.*
va tutto per la peggio,	all turns out *for the worst.*
lo vedo sempre,	I *always* see him.
non *lo vedo* mai,	I *never* see him.
non *gli perdonò* giammai,	he *never* forgave him.
l' ho già *veduto*,	I have *already* seen him.
non credo già *che venga*,	I do not (*indeed*) think he will come (expletive).
non è già *colpa vostra*,	It is not (*indeed*) your own fault (expletive).
non lo sogna neppure,	he does *not even* dream of it.
avete forse *paura?*	are you *then* afraid? (expletive).
verrà forse *domani*,	he will come *perhaps* to-morrow.
stètte alquanto in forse,	he was *in doubt* some time.
venite quì,	come *hither.*
là *era la fossa*,	*there* was the grave.
ivi *giacciono le reliquie*,	*there* lie the remnants.
correvano chi quà *chi* là,	they ran about, some *here* some *there.*
mia moglie è di là,	my wife is *there* (in *the next room*).
vi *sono bricconi anche* quì,	*here* also *there* are rogues.
vi *è gente* dappertutto,	*there* are people *everywhere.*
donde *venite?*	*where* do you come *from?*
dove *andate?*	*whither* are you going?
l' ho messo non so dove,	I have put it I know not *where.*

ci *vado quando posso*,	I go (*there*) when I can.
non ci *vengo se non m' invitate*,	I do not come (*here*) unless you invite me.
piuttosto oggi *che* domani,	rather *to-day* than *to-morrow*.
l' aspettiamo dall' oggi al domani,	we expect him *from* day *to day* (daily).
non l' ho veduto nè prima *nè* dopo,	I have seen him neither *before* nor *afterwards*.
lo vedo spesso,	I see him *often*.
riesce rare volte, *or* di rado,	he *seldom* succeeds.
tali cose avvengono talvolta, *or* talora,	such things happen *sometimes*.
avviene di quando in quando,	it happens *from time to time*.
l' inverno passa presto,	winter is *soon* over.
verrò quanto prima,	I will come *as soon as I can*.
venite quì subito,	come here *directly*.
ci arrivò di subito,	he came upon us *suddenly*.
arrivò tardi,	he arrived *late*.
parlate adagio,	speak *slowly*.
fu fatto in fretta,	it was done *in a hurry*.
mi parlò a lungo,	he spoke to me *a long time*.
alla lunga *non regge*,	it does not hold *in the long run*.
lo supera di gran lunga,	he beat him by *a long distance*.
l' affare va per le lunghe,	the affair drags to *a great length*.
la lite durò un pezzo,	the lawsuit lasted *a long while*.
se ne andò per tempo,	he went away *early*, or *betimes*.
non parlo a caso,	I do not speak *at random*.
fate da vero *o* da burla ?	are you *in earnest* or *jesting* ?
è difficile il far presto *e* bene,	it is difficult to do *quick* and *well*.
fate male *a non parlargliene*,	you do *wrong* in not speaking to him.
ha messo sossopra *la casa*,	he has put the house *topsyturvy*.
ho quasi *finito*,	I have *almost* done.
giuoca invece *di studiare*,	he plays *instead* of studying.
appena *vi arriva*,	he *scarcely* reaches it.
lo vidi appena *arrivato*,	I saw him *as soon as he had* arrived.
voi lo pregate invano, *or* indarno,	you beg him *in vain*.
lo fanno volontieri,	they do it *willingly*.
ci vengono a malincuore,	they come here *unwillingly*.
vanno e vengono a vicenda,	they go and come *by turns*.
lo invitano a gara,	they invite him *by competition* (they *strive with each other* in inviting him). (French, *à l' envi*.)
si tien sempre in disparte,	he always keeps *aloof*, or *aside*.
per lo più *dormo bene*,	I *generally* sleep well.

gli uomini per lo più *sono egoisti*,	men are *for the most part* selfish.
non ci penso affatto,	I do not think of it *at all.*
non me ne curo punto,	I do not care for it *in the least.*
verrà senza dubbio, *or* senza fallo, *or* senz' altro,	he will come, *without doubt.*
giacevano alla rinfusa,	they were lying *pêle-mêle.*
è alquanto *più attempata*,	she is *somewhat* more aged.

Exercise XXVIII.

He walks slowly. Do not look at me so fiercely. He has served me faithfully. He advanced boldly. Can I speak more plainly? I love my children tenderly. I will give him my daughter, most assuredly.

To walk, *camminare;* to look at, *guardare;* to serve, *servire;* to advance, *farsi innanzi;* to speak, *parlare;* to love, *amare;* to give, *dare;* can, *potere;* slow, *lento;* fierce, *fiero;* faithful, *fedele;* bold, *ardito;* plain, *chiaro;* tender, *tenero;* assured, *sicuro;* child, *figliuolo;* daughter, *figlia;* so, *sì.*

How sweetly she speaks and smiles. I will tell you the thing minutely. When do they come? Where are they coming from? How many are there (of them)? Where are they going? We expect them to-morrow To-day is the last day.

To speak, *parlare;* to smile, *ridere;* to tell, *dire;* to come, *venire;* to be, *essere;* to go, *andàre;* to expect, *attendere;* sweet, *dolce;* minute, *minuto;* of them, *ne;* last, *ultimo;* day, *giorno.*

Here lies a cardinal who did evil and good; but the good he did it ill, and the evil he did it well. I have looked for you everywhere. I can never find you. He is always angry. Perhaps he has very good reasons to be so (it).

To lie, *giacere;* to do, *fare;* to look for, *cercare;* to find, *trovare;* to be angry, *essere in collera;* cardinal, *cardinale;* evil, *male;* good, *bene;* reason, *ragione;* good, *buono;* but, *ma.*

I have scarcely a minute to lose. It is almost too late

already. Are you then in a hurry? You ought not indeed to be so impatient. You speak much, and think little. I wish you would speak less, and think more.

To lose, *perdere;* you ought, *dovere* (condit.); to be in a hurry, *aver fretta;* to think, *pensare;* I wish, *volere* (condit.); you would speak, *parlare* (subj. imp.).

I can hardly believe it. They are rogues for the most part. They praise each other *by competition* (outdoing one another). They flatter each other by turns. So you have (are) come at last. The whole city was topsyturvy. A great storm suddenly arose.

To believe, *credere*; to praise, *lodare*; they praise or flatter each other (they praise or flatter themselves); to arise, *levarsi;* to flatter, *adulare;* rogue, *briccone;* city, *città;* storm, *temporale;* so, *e così.*

He was buried as soon as he was dead. He is scarcely twenty. She is almost too young to (for) be her mother. She is old enough to be her grandmother.

To bury, *seppellire;* to die, *morire;* to be twenty (to have twenty years); as-soon-as-he-was (one adverb); to be her mother (to be mother to her); old, *vecchio;* year, *anno;* young, *giovine;* grandmother, *nonna.*

XXIX.—CONJUNCTIONS.

in città ed *in campagna,*	in town *and* country.
e *per me* e *per gli amici,*	*both* for me *and* my friends.
o *vincere* o *morire,*	*either* to conquer *or* to die.
nè *per amore* nè *per forza,*	*neither* by love *nor* by force.
non so se *vada* o se *resti,*	I do not know *whether* I should go *or* stay.
lo credo se *lo dite voi,*	I believe it *if* you say it.
lo dice ma *non lo crede,*	he says it *but* does not believe it.
perchè *non mangiate?*	*why* do you not eat?
perchè *non ho fame,*	*because* I am not hungry.

ve lo do perchè *lo mangiate,*	I give it you *that* you may eat it
non lasciavam l' andar perch' *ei dicesse,*	we did not cease from going on *although* he spoke.
bella ancora, benchè *vecchia,*	still handsome, *though* old.
sebbene *mi lodasse,*	*although* he praised me.
quantunque *egli si lusinghi,*	*however* he may flatter himself.
per quanto *ella mi biasimi,*	*however* much she may blame me.
pure *non mi lascio muovere,*	*yet* I do not allow myself to be moved.
non cedo però,	I do not yield, *though.*
non ritratto la mia parola, anzi *la ripeto,*	I do not withdraw my word, *rather* I repeat it.
è pazza, anzi *pazzissima,*	she is mad—*nay,* stark-mad.
io non so biasimarvi, anzi *vi lodo,*	I cannot blame you, *on the contrary* I praise you.
l' ho veduto, anzi *mi ha detto,*	I have seen him, *and even* he told me.
parlate pure ch' *io vi ascolto,*	you may (*well*) speak, *for* I hear you (expletive).
dite pure *quel che volete,*	you may (*well*) say what you like (expletive).
non mi ha pur *guardato,*	she has not *even* looked at me (adverb).
tremo pure *al pensarlo,*	I tremble *only* to think of it (adverb).
eppure *si muove,*	it moves, *though.*
non gli credetti, ma pure *mi commosse,*	I did not believe him, *yet* he moved me.
tu pure, *Bruto, figlio mio!*	thou, *too,* Brutus, my son!
mentre *egli parlava tutti lo guardavano,*	*whilst* he spoke, all looked at him.
non l' avrà mentr' *io vivo,*	he shall not have him *while* I live.
è egli che si lagna mentre *son io l' offeso,*	it is he that complains, *whilst* I am the offended person.
si lagna quasi *fosse egli l' offeso,*	he complains *as if* he were the offended person.
siccome *non mi ha scritto, non lo aspetto,*	as he has not written to me, I do not expect him.
siccome *non me lo diceste,* così *non posso saperlo,*	*as* you did not tell it me, *so* I cannot know it.
tu giungi opportuno come *la pioggia d' estate,*	you are *as* welcome *as* rain in summer.
come *crescono i giorni la primavera,* così *si accorciano l' autunno,*	*as* days lengthen in spring, *so* they draw in in autumn.

ve lo do affinchè *lo serbiate,*	I give it you *that* you may keep it.
mandatelo tosto ch' *ei venga,*	send him *as soon as* he comes.
difendilo sicchè *sia salvo,*	defend him *so that* he may be safe.
tutto è perduto fuorchè *l' onore,*	all is lost *but* honour.
tutti perirono tranne *il fanciullo,*	all perished *except* the child.
non v' è chi possa salvarci se non *l' amico nostro,*	there is no one that can save us, *unless* it be our friend.
egli può salvarci quando *vuole,*	he can save us *when* he wishes.
può salvarci quando *lo voglia,*	he can save us *if* he wishes.
noi non periremo quando *egli* noi *voglia,*	we shall not perish *unless* he wishes it.
quand' *è così è subito fatto,*	*if* it is so, it is done instantly.
non può nuocermi quand' anche *lo voglia,*	he can do me no harm, *even if* he wishes it.
mi difenderò purchè *mi guardiate le spalle,*	I will defend myself, provided you back me.
giacchè *lo volete eccovi la mano !*	*since* you wish it, here is my hand!
lo credo poichè *lo dite,*	I believe it *since* you say it.
dacchè *son partito non trovo pace,*	*since* I have left, I find no peace.
poscia che *fu morto un fratello, l' altro regnò solo,*	*after* one brother was dead, the other reigned alone.
non può regnar il figlio finchè non *muore il padre,*	the son cannot reign *till* the father dies.
in caso che *morisse il padre, regnerebbe il figlio,*	*if* the father died, the son would reign.
non succede il fratello ma bensì *il figlio,*	it is not the brother that succeeds, *but* (*indeed*) the son.
gli succedette il figlio, cioè *il Principe di Galles,*	he was succeeded by his son, *that is* the Prince of Wales.
lo amava molto, tanto più ch' *era figlio unico,*	he loved him greatly, *all the more as* he was an only son.
non so più che rispondere, però *non son persuaso,*	I know not what more to answer, *yet* I am not persuaded.
non posso crederlo, per altro *tutti lo dicono,*	I cannot believe it, *yet* every one says so.
era il più forte, non di meno *fu vinto,*	he was the strongest, nevertheless he was conquered.
non siete degno di lei, ciò non ostante *prendetela,*	you are not worthy of her, take her *nevertheless.*

Exercise XXIX.

I tell it you that you may know it. Scold him when he comes. Why does he come so late? He is very unhappy,

although so rich. He has left his umbrella, though it poured. He will repent (of) it, however.

To tell, *dire;* to know, *sapere;* to scold, *sgridare;* come, *venire;* to leave, *lasciare;* to pour, *diluviare;* to repent, *pentirsi;* unhappy, *misero;* rich, *ricco;* umbrella, *ombrello.*

If I go, who remains? If I stay, who goes? I do not know if it is right. Neither is mine [a] theft, nor am I [a] thief. I will take both the nag and the money. You shall have neither the money nor the nag. Either the one or the other I will have.

To go, *andare;* to stay or remain, *restare;* to know, *sapere;* to be right, *andar bene;* to take, *prendere;* I will have, *turn* (I will have it); theft, *furto;* thief, *ladro;* nag, *ronzino;* money, *danaro.*

How dull I am since my friends have left. I shall not be gay till they come back. We shall be merry when you return. I do not care whether he goes or stays, so thou leavest me not. I grieved for (of) thy absence all the more as thou didst not write.

Dull, *tristo;* gay, *lieto;* have left (are departed); to depart, *partire;* come back or return, *tornare;* to be merry, *far festa;* I do not care (it does not matter to me); to matter, *importare;* whether he goes or stays (that he may go or stay); so (provided) to grieve, *affliggersi.*

This is my best, nay, my only friend. I wish, on the contrary, that thou tell me what I am to do. Do not insist any longer, for I cannot grant what you ask. I would not grant it, even if I could. He knows I have no money, yet he always begs me to lend him some. He shall not get any from me, nevertheless.

To wish, *bramare;* I am to do (I have to do); to insist, *insistere;* to grant, *accordare;* to ask, *chiedere;* to beg, *pregare;* begs me to lend (begs me that I may lend); to get, *avere.*

You will not be forgiven unless you repent. As they have gone away without leave, they will be treated as deserters. Since you forgive him, give him your hand. There is nothing to praise about (in) her, except beauty. Repent, that Heaven may forgive thee.

You will not be forgiven (it will not be forgiven to you); to forgive, *perdonare;* to go away, *andarsene;* to treat, *trattare;* to repent, *pentirsi;* to praise, *lodare;* leave, *licenza;* deserter, *disertore.*

If I could laugh I would (indeed) laugh heartily. Go (then) since you are tired of us. He speaks as if he were the master.

Laugh, *ridere;* heartily, *di cuore;* tired, *stanco;* master *padrone*, *indeed* and *then* to be rendered by an expletive conjunction.

XXX.—INTERJECTIONS.

1. Some adjectives, and even a few nouns and verbs, may be used as interjections.

beato *chi crede!*	*blessed is he* who believes!
beati *quelli che piangono,*	*blessed are* they who mourn.
felice *il padre di tal prole,*	*happy* the father of such a family!
me lassa! *tu non vorresti, o padre, ch' io piangessi?*	*woe is me!* you would not have me weep, father?
i figli tuoi? no non fuggiro, ahi miseri!	thy sons? no they did not fly, *alas! the unhappy ones!*
pietà, *Signore!*	*have mercy,* Lord!
animo! *datevi a conoscere per lo sposo,*	*courage!* give yourselves out as the bridegroom.
basta! *non dico altro,*	*it is enough!* I say no more.
viva *l' allegria!*	*long live* joy!

2. The following interjections are frequently used:—

oh! *che mai dici?*	*oh!* what sayest thou?
ah! *il cuore me lo diceva,*	*ah!* my heart misgave me!
ahi! *crudo, sconoscente Saul,*	*oh!* cruel, ungrateful Saul!
ohimè! *i fratelli!*	*alas!* my brothers!
ehi! *chi è di là?*	*eh!* who is there? who is in waiting?
ehi! *quella giovine!*	*I say,* young woman!
via, *non lo sgridate!*	*come,* do not scold him.
via, via! *che importa?*	*come, come,* what matters it?
eh via, *sciocchezze!*	*oh come!* nonsense!
su, su, *fedeli miei,* su via, *prendete le fiamme e il ferro, ardete ed uccidete,*	*up, up,* my faithful ones, *come!* take fire and sword, burn and slay!
deh! *perdonategli,*	*oh!* pray *do* forgive him.
dì su! *che vuoi?*	*speak out, say freely,* what wouldst thou?
orsù! *parliam d' altro,*	*now come,* let us talk of something else.
e così! *come va la salute?*	*well then!* how is your health?
guai a voi, *anime prave!*	woe to you! ye depraved souls!
che peccato! *così giovane dover morire,*	what a pity! to have to die so young!
peccato *che non abbia danaro,*	*pity* he has no money!
ah, *ch' ei* pur troppo, a *ricovrar de' suoi nemici in seno ei mi sforzava!*	*ah* he, *too truly!* he himself forced me to seek shelter amongst his foes!
oh! questa è bella!	*oh! this is fine!*
oh! questa sì che è bella!	*oh! this is indeed fine.*
oh bella! *che ci ho da fare?*	*very nice indeed!* what have I to do with it?
oh curiosa! *che colpa ci ho io?*	*how very odd!* how am I to blame for it?
è curiosa! *non ci aveva pensato,*	*it is odd!* I had never thought about it.
se ci coglie stiam freschi!	if he catches us, *we are in a fine mess.*
sta fresco *anch' egli, poveretto,*	he also *is in a nice predicament,* poor fellow!
evviva! evviva!	*hurrah! hurrah!*
viva *l' Italia!*	*God bless* Italy! hurra for Italy!
evvivano *i galantuomini,*	*long life* to honest men. *Success* to honest men!
che seccatura!	*what a bore!*

bagatella !	*a trifle ! a little trifle !*
eh giusto ! per l' appunto !	*just so ! exactly so !*
ma bravo ! ma bene !	*bravo ! well done !*
tutti gridavano dalli ! dalli !	all cried out, *have at him ! give it him !*
zitto, zitto, piano, piano !	*hush ! hush ! gently ! gently !*
zitta, *ragazza mia !*	*hush*, my dear girl !
zitte, *ragazze mie !*	*hush*, my good girls !
ohibò ! *che discorsi son questi,*	*O fie !* how you do talk !
vergogna ! *m' avevate promesso di non farlo più,*	*for shame* ! you had promised not to do that again.
non tradirmi per pietà !	do not betray me, *for pity's sake !*
fate piano, per carità !	go gently, *for charity's sake !*
aiutatelo, per amor di Dio !	help him, *for God's sake !*
abbiam di che vivere, grazie a Dio !	we have wherewith to live, *thank God !*
grazie, *signore, non v' incomodate,*	*thanks*, sir, do not trouble yourself.
tante grazie *del buon consiglio,*	*many thanks* for your good advice.
mille grazie *della finezza,*	*a thousand thanks* for your kindness.
che bella cosa *poter dire : comando io !*	*what a nice thing* to say : I am the master.
mala cosa *nascer povero !*	*it is a bad job* to be born poor !
largo ! largo ! *che passa il re,*	*room ! room !* the king is passing !
misericordia ! che spettacolo !	*mercy ! what a sight !*

Exercise XXX.

Oh, merciful [was] she who succoured me, and thou [wert] kind who obeyedst instantly ! Blessed be the day, the month, and the year ! Poor me ! my husband has forsaken me ! Poor me ! my wife has deceived me !

Merciful, *pietoso ;* to succour, *soccorrere ;* kind, *cortese ;* to obey, *ubbidire ;* instantly, *tosto ;* blessed, *benedetto ;* poor, *povero ;* to forsake, *abbandonare ;* to deceive, *ingannare.*

Alas ! ill-advised king ! Now, come ! let him be dragged to death ! Oh, Heaven ! what hast thou done ? Oh ! glorious days of victory ! Oh ! my past times ! Oh ! [that] I could to-day meet my death here from the enemy's sword.

Ill-advised, *sconsigliato ;* to drag, *trarre ;* past time, *tempo*

trascorso; that I could meet my death, *turn* (could I have death); enemy's sword, *inimico brando.*

Miserable us! what are we if God forsakes us! Oh! would it were daylight! Night, come, quickly yield to the blessed sun. Shall I see her? Oh! happiness! Ah, woe is me! who live ever in incessant darkness.

Miserable, *misero;* to forsake, *lasciare;* (would it) were daylight (sub. imp.); to be light, *raggiornare;* night, *notte;* to yield, *cedere il campo;* blessed sun, *almo sole;* happiness, *gioia;* woe, *lasso;* incessant darkness, *tenebre incessanti;* ever, *pur sempre;* to live, *vivere.*

Come! you have too long abused my patience. Hush, my child! Hush, my children! do not wake your father. Oh fie, for shame! have you forgotten the advice I gave you? Thanks, sir, a thousand thanks!

Too long, *troppo;* to abuse, *abusare di;* patience, *sofferenza;* child, *fanciullo;* to wake, *svegliare;* forget, *dimenticare;* advice, *consiglio;* sir, *signore.*

Do not torment me, for pity's sake! Send him away, for Heaven's sake. He is gone away, thank God! What a pity we did not think of (to) it before. How nice it would be if we could do without him! Pity it is (subj. pr.) so late.

To torment, *tormentare;* send, *mandare;* how nice it would be (what a fine thing!) to think, *pensare.*

It is odd! you always repeat the same thing! We are in a nice predicament if we must never open (our) mouth.

To repeat, *ripetere;* to open, *aprire;* mouth, *bocca.*

XXXI.—CONSTRUCTION.

1. The Italian Language admits of great freedom of construction.

2. It is, however, amenable to general logical principles.

3. The following are among the most important inversions.

(*a*) The nominative, or subject, may and should be placed after the verb.

i.—For the sake of perspicuity, especially when the same subject governs two verbs, or is followed by a relative

Example.

lo dice il maestro, *e sa quel che dice,*	*the teacher* says it, and he knows what he says.
ha detto il padrone *che non vuole uscire,*	*master* said he would not go out.
è giunto un messo *che desidera parlarvi,*	*a messenger* has arrived, who wishes to speak to you.
morì il papa *e gli successe* suo nipote,	*the pope* died, and *his nephew* succeeded to him.

ii.—By way of emphasis or antithesis. The emphatic word generally opening or closing the sentence.*

Example.

io *son che prego,*	it is *I* who beg.
in questa casa comando io,	*I* am the master in this house.
se non lo vendete voi, *lo venderanno* i vostri credi,	if *you* do not sell it, *your heirs* will.
a quel caffè non vanno che militari,	none but *military men* go to that coffee-house.
il pellegrino l' avrà sognato Carlandrea,	as to the pilgrim, it must be *Carlandrea*, who has dreamt of him.

iii.—For the sake of euphony, which generally requires the longest member of a sentence to come last.

Example.

giace l' alta Cartago,	lofty Carthage lies low.
muoiono le città, *muoiono* i regni,	*cities, empires* perish.

---

* The effect of emphasis in the construction of sentences will result from the following short and simple sentences:

i.—*vostra sorella arriva* oggi: that is, *arriva* oggi *e non domani,*	i.—your sister comes *to-day*; viz. comes *to-day*, not to-morrow.
ii.—*oggi arriva* vostra sorella: that is, *arriva* vostra sorella *ma non vostra madre,*	ii.—to-day *your sister* comes; viz. *your sister*, not your mother.
iii.—*oggi vostra sorella* arriva: that is, arriva *e vi trova partito,*	iii.—to-day your sister *comes*; viz. she *comes* and finds you gone.

verrà il giorno *della vendetta*, — *the day* of retribution will come.

(*b*) All other inversions may be reduced to analogous principles.

Example.

a popol servo *non mancan tiranni*,	there is no lack of tyrants *for a slavish people.*
i peccati *o in un mondo o nel l' altro bisogna scontarli*,	one must atone *for sins*, either in one world or another.
dolce *in ogni tempo è il benefizio*,	beneficence is *sweet* at all times.
più *che il dolor* potè *il digiuno*,	fasting had *more power* than grief.
uomo per virtù celebre *e per delitti*,	a man *celebrated* for his virtues and for his crimes.
assai mi avanza *in coraggio, in virtude, in senno, in tutto—David.*	David *far surpasses me* in courage, in virtue, in wisdom, in everything.
tanto più irreparabile *sarà la vostra rovina*,	your ruin will be *all the more irreparable.*
il rival salvar tu dei,	*thou oughtest* to save thy rival.
il solo amico ch' io vantar potessi,	the only friend that I *could* boast.
l' abisso in cui precipitato lo aveano *i suoi vizi*,	the abyss into which his vices *had* plunged him.

(*c*) The following inversions are of such frequent occurrence as to become almost natural to the language :—

mi duole il capo,	*my head* aches.
corre voce,	*a rumour* is abroad.
nasce il sole,	*the sun* rises.
cade il giorno,	*the day* sets.
ci pensa il padrone,	*the master* provides.
all' avvenire ci pensano gli astrologi,	it is for astrologers to think of the future.
lo voglia il cielo !	may *heaven* grant it !
mi resta speranza,	*hope* still remains to me.
ci vuol coraggio,	*courage* is required.
ci narrano le storie,	*histories* tell us.
chi troppo *vuole* niente *ha*,	he who covets *too much*, gets *nothing.*
chi troppo *abbraccia* nulla *stringe*,	he who undertakes *too much*, achieves *nothing.*
comanda *chi può*, ubbidisce *chi deve*,	he who has the power *rules ;* he who is bound *obeys.*
a buono intenditor *poche parole*,	a word *to the wise.*
a tanto intercessor *nulla si neghi*,	let nothing be denied *to so great an intercessor.*

ai voli troppo alti e repentini *sogliono i precipizi esser vicini,*	great and sudden flights are usually attended by downfalls.

4. The Italian delights in ellipsis,—that is, omission of words easily implied by the context of the sentence. We have seen frequent examples in the articles and pronouns.

Example.

si vede che siete poeta,	one can see you are *a* poet.
la processione era giunta in piazza,	the procession had arrived at *the* square.
hanno perduto il padre,	*they* have lost *their* father.

5. In the same manner auxiliary verbs are frequently omitted.

vedutolo, lo chiamò,	*having* seen him, he called him.
chiamatolo e trattolo in disparte, gli parlò a lungo,	*having* called him, and *having* taken him aside, he spoke to him for a long time.
sospirai la mia perduta pace,	I sighed for the peace *which I had* lost.
è inutile ripetere le cose dette,	it is useless to repeat the things *that have been* said.
il consiglio datomi dal mio amico,	the counsel *which was* given me by my friend.

6. The Italian omits the repetition of a verb altogether, when the English expresses it by the word *do*.

Example.

le mogli amano i mariti più ch' essi le mogli,	wives love their husbands more than these *do* their wives.

7. The following are amongst the most remarkable cases of ellipsis:—

fu punito di morte: viz. *fu punito* della pena *di morte,*	he was punished with death.
era di Maggio;—era nel mese *di Maggio,*	it was in May.
morì nel 1821;—*morì nell'* anno 1821,	he died in 1821.
è andato a cercare del medico;—è andato pel medico;—è andato a cercar l' assistenza *del medico,*	he is gone for the physician, to fetch the physician.

gli han dato dell' asino;—gli han dato il nome *di asino,*	they have called him an ass.
domandan di me; — domandan nuove *di me,*	they inquire after me.
il tavernaro racconta allo Scricca d' una: (viz. *racconta* la storia) *d' una che il morto suo marito appicca,*	the host tells Scricca the story of one who hanged her dead husband.
partii di Parigi; — partii dalla città *di Parigi,*	I set out from Paris.
in quella giunse il padrone;—in quell' ora, or *in quella* congiuntura,	in that moment, or at that juncture, the master arrived.
credo non verrà;—credo che *non verrà,*	I think he will not come.
come rimarrà Attilio!—come rimarrà stupefatto,	how astonished Attilio will be!
il cavallo spaventato a tal vista;— essendo *spaventato,*	the horse being frightened by the sight.
messomi in viaggio; — essendomi *messo in viaggio,*	having set out on the journey.
a lui tocca a comandare, a voi ubbidire;—a voi tocca,	it is his part to command, yours to obey.
è tanto avveduta quanto voi;— quanto siete *voi,*	she is as crafty as you *are.*
io posso aiutarlo meglio di voi,	I may help him better than you *could.*
voi gli parlereste più chiaro di me,	you *would* speak to him more plainly than I *could.*

8. The Italian has three modes of address:—The second person singular, *tu*, thou; the second person plural, *voi*, you; and the third person singular, *ella*, or *vostra signoria*, your lordship, your ladyship, etc.

9. The *tu*, thou, is used in cases of the greatest intimacy and connection, or else by way of anger and scorn. It is used, in all cases, in ancient, classical, or very elevated language.

Example.

a tua *madre non dir nulla d' una cosa simile,*	to *thy* mother *thou* sayest nothing about such a matter.

*levami*ti *d' innanzi, poltrone incappucciato!* — get out of my sight, *thou* cowled craven!

re, s' io ti *torno innanzi,* — king, if I come before *thy* presence.

signor, gran cose in picciol tempo hai *fatte,* — my lord, *thou hast* done great things in a short space of time.

10. The *voi*, you, is used, as applied to one person, in cases of incipient friendship, or towards servants and dependents. It is used in addressing kings, in a semi-lofty style, and in a tone of chivalrous courtesy.

con voi, *signore si può parlare liberamente,* — with *you*, sir, one can speak freely.

vedete *se il pranzo è lesto,* — see if the dinner is ready.

i vostri *sudditi, o sire, hanno udita la* vostra *parola,* — your subjects, O sire, have heard your word.

damigella, siete *nostra,* — young lady, *you* are in our power.

11. The *ella*, or *lei*, is used towards persons placed above us in rank, age, or office, or generally towards strangers of gentlemanly station. It represents *vostra signoria*, or *la signoria vostra*, your lordship or ladyship; or else *vostra eccellenza*, your excellency; *vostra altezza*, your highness; *vostra maestà*, your majesty; *vostra santità*, your holiness, etc. The whole of the speech is supposed to be addressed to the *title, and not to the person;* and as these titles are all feminine, all pronouns *you* and *yours* are translated into Italian as if they were *it* and *its*, and are all feminine.

Example.

ella *mi* fa *un onore ch' io non merito,* — *you do* me an honour which I do not deserve,—viz. *it* (your lordship) *does* me.

io la *ringrazio infinitamente,* — I thank *you* (*it*),—(*viz.* your lordship or ladyship).

da lei *non mi aspetto che favori,*	I only expect favours from *you* (*it*, etc.).
è questo il suo *libro?*	is this *your* (*its*, *your lordship's*) book?
come sta la sua *signora madre?*	how is *your* (*its*, *your lordship's*, or *your ladyship's*) mother?
l' ha *veduta stamane?*	*have you* (*has it*, *has your lordship*) seen her this morning?
quando spera *di vederla?*	when *do you hope* (*does it hope*) to see her?

12. The same form of address is also used in the plural, when *elleno* or *loro* represents *le signorie vostre*, your lordships or ladyships, or *lor signori*, *lor signore*, you gentlemen, you ladies.

Example.

favoriscano *d' accomodarsi,*	*be so good* as to sit down,—viz. *let your lordships* or *ladyships be so good*, etc.
che dicono di questo tempo?	what *do you* (*they*, *your lordships*, etc.) say of this weather?
sono ai loro *comandi,*	I am at *your* (*their*) orders.

13. The following sentences will give further development to this peculiar mode of address:—

son venuto a trovare la signoria vostra, *perchè mi* ha *detto che* voleva *vendere i* suoi *cavalli, ed io volendone comprare, amo meglio venire a patti con* lei *che con altri,*	I have come to *you*, because *you told* me that *you wished* to sell *your* horses, and as I wish to buy some, I prefer to bargain with *you* rather than with any one else.
affidato alla gentilezza di vostra signoria, *vengo a pregarla di una grazia, la quale a dir vero non riguarda tanto me stesso quanto il fanciullo ch'* ella ha *commesso alle mie cure,*	relying on *your* kindness, I come to beg of *you* a favour, which truly does not concern myself so much as the boy whom *you* have trusted to my care.

se continuano *il* loro *cammino*, le signorie vostre *non* possono *mancare di giungere prima di sera*;
or, more simply,
se continuano *il cammino*, *non* possono *mancare di giungere prima di sera*,
} if *you* (plur.) continue *your* journey, *you* cannot fail to arrive before evening.

poichè ella *vuol rimettersene a me*, *io* la *servirò con piacere*, since *you* wish to leave the matter to me, I will serve *you* gladly.

14. *Lei* and *la* are pretty generally, though incorrectly, used in the nominative instead of *ella*; and *loro* instead of *elleno*. *Lor Signori*, instead of *Le Signorie vostre* (your Lordships), is also used, though with no great propriety.

io mi rimetto a ciò che dice lei, I will abide by what *you* say.

vedo bene che la *non mi crede*, { I see clearly that *you* do not believe me.

chi è lei, *si può sapere?* can one know who *you* are?

la *mi perdoni*, *non* l' *aveva veduta*, forgive me, I had not seen you.

se non hanno difficoltà loro, *per me non ne ho alcuna*, if *you* (pl.) have no objection, I have none.

felicissima notte a *Lor Signori*, { a very good night *to you, gentlemen* (to your Lordships).

ho veduta la sua *signora madre*. *Essa mi disse che verrebbe a trovarla in città, quando* ella *volesse prometterle di restituire ad essa la visita in campagna*, I have seen *your* mother. She told me she would come and see *you* in town, provided *you* would promise her to return the visit in the country.

giungeranno domani le loro *sorelle*. *Esse* le *pregano per mezzo mio di far loro apparecchiare le loro stanze. Aggiungono però che esse non si tratterranno con* loro *che pochi giorni*, to-morrow *your* sisters will come. They beg *you*, through me, to have their rooms ready for them. They add, however, that they will only stay with *you* a few days.

15. In cases like these two last ones, great care must be taken to avoid ambiguity between the person addressed, and a third person referred to, especially if the latter be feminine. In the very last case, however, the Italian is clearer than the English; as in the latter language it does not clearly result whether one or more persons be addressed.

THE END.

JOHN CHILDS AND SON, PRINTERS.

A

KEY TO THE EXERCISES

IN

MARIOTTI'S

ITALIAN GRAMMAR.

New Edition.

WILLIAMS AND NORGATE,
14, HENRIETTA STREET, COVENT GARDEN, LONDON;
AND
20, SOUTH FREDERICK STREET, EDINBURGH.
P. ROLANDI, 20, BERNERS STREET.
1870.

303 . b. 19.

JOHN CHILDS AND SON, PRINTERS.

A

KEY TO THE EXERCISES

IN

MARIOTTI'S ITALIAN GRAMMAR.

II.—ARTICLES.

Il maestro e lo scolare. Il Re e la Regina. Lo sposo e la sposa. L' eroe e l' eroina. L' imperatore e l' imperatrice. Il principe e la principessa. L' altare e la vittima. L' ambasciatore.

Un Re ed una Regina. Gli ambasciatori. Gli eroi. L' eroine. Gl' inni. Gl' imperatori. Lo zelo. Gli scolari e i maestri. Gli amici. Le ortiche. La bellezza. L' universo. I fiori. I giardini.

III.—ARTICLES WITH PREPOSITIONS.

L' amico del Re. Le amiche della Regina. Il bastone del maestro. Il figlio dell' imperatore. Il giardino della Regina. Coi fanciulli dell' imperatrice. Dalla bellezza dell' universo. Nell' ore della mattina. Tra i fiori del giardino.

Le chiavi dell' uscio dell' orto. Sulla porta del giardino. Gli adulatori dell' imperatore. L' inno del profeta. Cogl' inni del signore. Lo zio del Re. Le zie della Regina. Gli zii del principe. Uno zio della principessa.

Un' ora. Su d' un uscio. Da un giardino. Sulla porta d' un giardino. Con un bastone. Col bastone del maestro. La bellezza d' un fanciullo. Tra il Re e la Regina. Dagli amici del Re. Agli amici del fanciullo.

Le stagioni dell' anno. I giorni della settimana. Nel concavo della mano. Sulla strada. Alla posta. Colla carrozza. Nel calamaio. Sul tetto. Dell' uomo. Alla donna. Cogli uomini. Dalle donne. D' un uomo. Ad una donna. Colle donne. Dagli uomini.

IV.—USE OF THE ARTICLES.

Il giorno del giudizio. Il timore della morte. L' ira del Re. L' anima dell' universo. Colla provvidenza del cielo. L' ombra dell' albero. Le ombre delle nubi. Tra l' erba e i fiori. Gli eroi disprezzano gli onori e i piaceri. Dei fiori. Dell' erba.

Dio è il giudice delle azioni degli uomini. L' angue nell' erba. Per amor del cielo. Le campane della chiesa. Il lume della luna. Al levar del sole. Sulla cima delle Alpi. I monti della luna. Le arene del deserto. La polve dei campi.

Il rimedio dei mali. Il giardino dell' Europa. Opere di Molière, tomo terzo. Lento all' amore e all' ira. I campi e i prati. Nei campi e nei prati. Pei campi e pei prati. Lungo i campi e i prati.

La morte è il termine de' mali. L' Italia è il giardino d' Europa. Milton, poeta Inglese. Pope, anch' egli poeta. L' America fu scoperta dagl' Italiani. Il Re è in

sala. La Regina è in giardino. Londra è la capitale dell' Inghilterra. Carlo Primo, Re d' Inghilterra. Gli amici di Cesare. I nemici di Catone. Da Roma a Babilonia.

Sulle sponde del rio. Lungo la riva del mare. Leggo cogli occhiali. Scrivo con penne d' acciaio. Nel cuore della state. Dal furore della fortuna. Le passioni degli uomini. I capricci delle donne. Castelli in aria. Trastulli di bambini,—*or better* trastulli da bambino.

La Regina è in campagna. Il Re non è in casa. Il padre è in città. La fantesca è in cantina. Andiamo a teatro. È andata in chiesa. La madre è in chiesa. I fanciulli sono a scuola. I fanciulli vanno a scuola.

V.—GENDER OF NOUNS.

Il timor di Dio. Lo spirito del Vangelo. La mano della Provvidenza. La nebbia della sera. L' acqua del mare. La stagione della Quaresima. Dal furor del popolo. Sull' altare della patria. Nel libro del profeta.

La fonte della verità. L' amore della virtù. Pel clima del mezzogiorno. La madre e il fanciullo. Un gregge di pecore. Un pari del regno. La casa del signore. La furia del poeta. Uno scisma nella chiesa. Lo stemma del re.

Il diadema del monarca. L' inno del profeta. L' elezione del papa produsse uno scisma. Col canto del poeta. Il ventaglio d' una Spagnuola. La civetteria d' una Francese.

La forza d'un orso. L' orsa e i suoi orsatti. La prestezza d' un lepre. La lepre e i suoi lepratti. Il fratello è mio amico. La sorella è mia amica. Un contadino e una contadina. Il giovine e la giovane.

Il figlio e la figlia. La bellezza d' una Circassa. Il ragazzo e la ragazza. Il nipote e la nipote. Lo sposo e la sposa. Il barone e la baronessa. Il duca e la duchessa.

Il principe e la principessa. Lo zio e la zia. Il nonno e la nonna.

Il marchese e la marchesa. Il signore e la signora. Il poeta e la poetessa. Il profeta e la profetessa. Il fattore e la fattora. Datemi una pera e una pesca

---

VI.—PLURAL OF NOUNS.

Gl' idoli degli Egiziani. Gli Dei dei Greci. Le braccia della Provvidenza. I raggi del sole. Tra le antichità della Grecia. Il paese dei boschi e dei laghi. Gli sciocchi sono spesso le vittime dei malvagi.

Le tribù degl' Indiani. Le labbra dei negri. Le cesoie delle Parche. Greggi di porci e d' oche. I funghi nascono nei boschi. I fichi non nascono nei climi del settentrione. Un boschetto d' aranci.

I diademi dei monarchi. I profeti degli Ebrei. Il colore delle guance. Le botteghe sono sotto i portici. Le cortine colle frange e coi fiocchi. I raggi dei pianeti. I pari del regno. Gli anni della gioventù.

Gli scanni dei giudici. L' iniquità dei giudici degli uomini. I nemici del re. Le ciglia di Giove. Padre degli uomini e degli Dei. Nelle città della pianura. Gli Sciti combattevano cogli archi e colle frecce. Le mogli degl' Indiani. Le uova d' uno struzzo.

Due corna di cervo sull' uscio. Sulle mura della città. Due mandre di buoi. Nei tempi della Regina Elisabetta. I tempî degli Dei. Pendono stemmi dai muri della chiesa. La rettitudine delle intenzioni del re. I poemi di Saffo.

Le verghe dei maghi. Le bugie dei giornalisti. Due specie di funghi. L' uovo di Colombo. Al suono de' corni e de' flauti. I membri del senato. Mida aveva le orecchie

d' asino. Le grida del fanciullo. Uova di struzzo. Camminò cinquanta miglia in un giorno.

VII.—ADJECTIVES.

Un popolo libero ed indipendente. Le città libere del Reno. Occhi azzurri e capelli neri. Il fioco raggio delle stelle remote; dell' erranti comete; dei pianeti erranti. Lo studio della lingua Italiana.

I cavalieri della tavola rotonda. Il padre è ricco. La madre è ricca. Padre e figlio son ricchi. La madre e la figlia son ricche. Il padre e la madre son ciechi ai difetti della figlia. Un bicchier d' acqua fresca.

Avvolto in un manto verde. La bella creatura in bianca veste. Ho un bel cavallo. Un cavalier nero sur un destriero bianco. Ho comprato quattro bei cavalli. La chiesa è grande. Una gran chiesa. (La chiesa di) San Pietro è un bell' edifizio.

Vi sono molte chiese in Roma. Tante chiese! Quante chiese! Troppi palazzi! Molti palazzi e poche chiese! Una gran casa. Una grande strada. Un bel palazzo. Una bella torre. Molti bei palazzi.

Gran ciarlone! Grand' asino! Gli dei bugiardi degli antichi Romani. Gl' idoli dei Greci erano ciechi e sordi. Sant' Antonio è il protettore dei porci. Le mattinate sono fresche. Le serate sono corte. Le giornate sono lunghe. Strada Santa Lucia. Con impari forze: Con pari orgoglio.

Tanta bassezza! Tanti delitti! Quanti traditori! Troppi cuochi! Tanta fretta! Quanti bei cavalli! Quanti begli asini! Pochi libri. Quante penne? Poca speranza. Tanta polve! Tanto fango! Tante volte!

Quante volte? Altrettante volte. Parecchie volte. Parecchi giorni. Quante orgoglio! Quanta miseria!

VIII.—COMPARATIVES AND SUPERLATIVES.

La madre par più giovine della figlia. La figlia è men bella della madre. Il figlio è più grande del padre. Il padre è men ricco del figlio. Maria è più saggia di Lucia: più saggia di voi.

Siete così saggia come vostra sorella. Vostra sorella è tanto sciocca come vostra madre. Ella è sciocca così com' essa è bella. Il fratello è ricco quanto la sorella. La sorella è più ricca del fratello. Ella è buona quanto è bella.

È piuttosto dotto che ingegnoso. È piuttosto inferma che attempata. E più temerario che valoroso. È ardito quanto un leone. È bianca come la neve. Più bianca della neve. Più ardito d' un leone. Muto come la tomba.

Meglio oggi che domani. L' uomo è più forte della donna. Meglio un uovo oggi che una gallina domani. Meglio piangere coi giusti che esultar cogl' iniqui. Meglio perire una volta che tremar sempre. Più presto la morte che il disonore.

I cavalli Arabi son migliori degl' Inglesi. La terra è più grande della luna. L' usuraio è peggior del ladro. La virtù è il sommo bene. Nessun peggior nemico che un amico infido. Il cavallo bianco è il migliore.

È bellissima. È molto saggio. Il clima Inglese è assai salubre. L' Inghilterra è il paese più libero del mondo. E il più profondo filosofo del secolo. Il più profondo pensatore della Germania. Il più gran ciarlone.

Vostro servo umilissimo. Una vezzosissima ragazza. Col massimo piacere. Col minimo disturbo. Un uomo d' ottimo cuore. Due bellissimi cavalli. Signori molto compiti. Letterati assai profondi. Il più bel cavallo.

IX.—AUGMENTATIVES AND DIMINUTIVES.

Il vecchierello appoggiato al suo bastoncino. La contadinella coi suoi agnellini. Questa fanciulla è un' angeletta. Che visino leggiadro! Povera creaturina! Caro uccelletto. Dolce fiorellino!

Avete comprato una casa: un casone. Il principe ha comprato un palazzo: un palazzotto. Un vecchio cappellaccio: un gran libraccio. Avete fatto benone. Venite prestino. Leggete adagino.

Siete uno scioccone. E una pazzerella. Fermatevi un momentino. Dove avete comprato quel grazioso cagnolino? Un ruscelletto bagnava i praticelli. Vedete quella capannuccia. Dove avete comprato quel cavallaccio?

L' aura susurra tra i rami del boschetto. Riposiamoci sulla tenera erbetta.

X.—NUMERAL ADJECTIVES.

Sette figli; quattro maschi e cinque femmine; un maschio ed una femmina. Quarant' una lira. Sei mila combattenti; quattromila, cinquecento fanti, e mille cinquecento cavalli. Washington morì nel mille settecento novanta nove.

Francesco Primo. Carlo Quinto. Il ventiquattro Febbraio. Petrarca fioriva verso la metà del secolo decimoquarto, *or*, verso la metà del trecento. Morì alle cinque. La mattina alle undici meno un quarto. Sono le undici e mezza. Galileo fioriva nel secolo decimo sesto, *or*, nel cinquecento.

Tasso, canto tredicesimo; stanza ventesima quarta. Tornò con poche centinaia d' uomini. Mi portò alcune

dozzine di guanti. Due paia di stivali. Ha perduto parecchie migliaia di lire. Mi contento d' una metà. Morì nove mesi fa.

Tornate fra sei settimane. Da oggi a quindici. Di quì a sei settimane. Da tre settimane in qua. Entro nove mesi. Sette via sette quarantanove. Viene entro l' anno. Viene da oggi a otto. Viene di quì a un mese.

XI.—PERSONAL PRONOUNS.

Piange. Rido; ella piange ed io rido. Piange? Va a cavallo. Vo a piedi. Io vo a piede ed egli va a cavallo. Vengo teco. Andate con lei. Fate colazione con noi. Pranzate con me, *or*, meco. Parla sempre di sè. Non l' avrete da me. Non abbiate fede in lei. Ella parla sempre di sè. Sono più povero di voi. Siete più ricco di me. Sono più superbi di lui. È più infelice di te. Mi congratulo con voi. Non mi son dimenticato di te. Abbi pietà di lui. Non ha pietà di lei. Non ha pietà di noi. Non andrò senza di loro. Non andrò senza di lei. Lo aiuterò quanto posso. Lo aiutava quando poteva. Lo aiuterei se potersi. Voi capite l' Italiano ma io non lo capisco. Anche voi vi prendete gioco di noi? Anch' ella si ride di me. Siete voi che rompete i bicchieri? Sei tu che piangi? Chi son essi? Chi è dessa? Chi sei?

XII.—CONJUNCTIVE PRONOUNS.

Parlatemi. Parlategli. Parlate a me, non a lui. Parlate a me? Parlate a me o a lui? Parlatele. Parlate a lei

e a lui. Non mi parlate. Parlateci. Non ci parlate.

Lo stimo. La stimo. Stimo lui e lei. Vi vedo. Mi vedete. Voi mi vedete, ma io non vi vedo, *or*, Io vedo voi, ma voi non vedete me. Vedete la torre? La vedo. Vedete il castello? Lo vedo. Mi vedete? La vedete? Ci vedete? Lo vedete?

Aveva due figli. Gli ho perduti. Aveva due figlie. Le ho maritate. Vi punirò. Non vi punirò. Lo punirò. Dio la punirà. Dio ci punirà. Non mi punite. Non ci punite. Punite lui e non lei.

Vedete quegli alberi? Li vedo. Non li vedo. Non posso vederli. Vedete quelle case? Non le vedo. Non ne vedo alcuna. Vedete alcuna nave? Non ne vedo alcuna. Avete molti figli? Non ne ho alcuno.

Portatemi il libro. Datele la penna. Volete il libro? Prendetelo. Volete la penna? Domandatela, ma non la prendete. Volete il libro e la penna? Prendeteli. Vedete i signori? Li vedo. Vedete le signore? Le vedo. Vedete i signori e le signore? Li vedo. Vedete la signora? La vedo. Vedete la signora e il signore? Li vedo.

XIII.—DOUBLE CONJUNCTIVE PRONOUNS.

Ecco il libro. Lo volete? Domandatelo. Domandatemelo. Domandatelo a me, non ad alcun altro. Vedendoci ci chiamò. Vedendola l' amò. Avendola veduta, (*or* vedutola,) l' odiò. Avendovi incontrati, vi parlai.

Volete il libro? Eccolo. L' ho veduto. Ho veduto lui, ma non voi. Ho veduto lui solo. Vi ho veduti entrambi. Vedete quei signori? Eccoli! Vedete quelle signore? Eccole!

Ci raccomanda. Vi ci raccomanda. Mi ti raccomanda. Mi vi raccomanda. Lo comando. Ve lo comando. Ve

la raccomando. Parlatele. Parlategliene. Non gliene parlate. Mostratelo. Mostratemelo. Non melo mostrate.

Avete un oriuolo? Mostrateglielo. Avete una borsa? Mostrategliela. Avete un libro? Volete mostrarmelo? Velo mostrerò. Lo mostrerò a voi ma non a lei. E questa vostra moglie? Presentatemele. Presentatemela.

Dove è vostra moglie? Eccola! Vi presenterò a lei, ma non a sua sorella. Vi presenterò lei, ma non sua sorella.

Vi parlo. Ti parlo. Te ne parlo. Rispondimi. Mi risponde. Non vuol rispondermi. Non voglio rispondervi. Non le risponderò. Rispondetegli. Rispondetele. Non le rispondete.

Dammi. Dallo. Dammelo. Dammi il libro. Dimmi il vero. Dille ciò che ti dissi. Parlamene. Dimmene il tuo parere. Ditemene il vostro parere. Ditemelo, *or* dimmelo.

Dalle il libro. Dagli il libro. Non dargli il libro. Non glielo dare. Non lo dare, (*or* non darlo,) a lei ma a lui. Dateci del vino. Dammi del pane. Dammene. Dategliene. Datene anche a lui.

Avete del pane? Datecene. Hai delle noci? Daccene. Avete un giornale? Dateglielo. Hai una mela? Dagliela. Avete molti cavalli? Datecene uno. Hai molte penne? Daccene una.

Ci acconsento. Non posso acconsentirci. Avete della carta? Non ne ho. Ne volete? Non ne voglio. Pensaci. Ci penso. Ci pensino. Non ci pensiamo.

Lo stima. La stima. Egli stima lei, ma ella non istima lui. C' invitarono. Dobbiamo invitarli. L' inviteremo. Inviteremo lui e lei. Invitatela se ella v' invita, *or* Invitate lei se ella invita voi.

Mi lagno. Me ne lagno. Non oso lagnarmene. Se ne pente. Non vuol pentirsi. Non ce ne pentiamo. Pentiamoci. Non ce ne pentiamo.

Pentiti. Pentitevi. Si pentano. Mi sforzo. Mi ci sforzo. Non potete sforzarmici, *or* non mi ci potete

sforzare. Non mi ci sforzate. Si sforza. Non lo sforzate. Non ce lo sforzate. Non vi ci sforzate.

XIV.—POSSESSIVE PRONOUNS.

Ecco il mio cavallo ed ecco il vostro. Dov' è vostro fratello? Dove sono i vostri fratelli? Chi è vostro cugino? Chi sono i vostri cugini? Ditelo a vostro suocero. Ditelo ai vostri cognati.

Chiamate vostra suocera. Parlate a vostra cognata. Chiamate le vostre cognate. Che comanda vostra signoria? *or* Che comanda la signoria vostra? Sua santità è in Roma. Vostro zio ha sposato mia sorella minore. La vostra bella sorellina si sposerà domani. Ha perduto il marito; *or* ha perduto suo marito. Conduceva a mano il fratellino, *or* il suo fratellino.

Questo è il mio cavallo. Volete comprare i miei cavalli? Questo cavallo è mio. Questa è mia nipote. Questo è mio nipote. Questo è il mio miglior cavallo. Questa è la mia diletta nipote. Egli è mio amico, *or* mi è amico. Non è mio amico, *or* non mi è amico. S' è fatto male a un piede.

Queste sono le tue nipoti. Questi sono i suoi nipoti. Questi sono i loro figli. Questi sono i suoi figli. Queste sono le sue figlie. Ricordati che è tuo figlio, *or better* che ti è figlio. Ricordati che son tuoi figli. Ricordati che son tua moglie, *or* ti son moglie.

Ha perduti i genitori. Il padre è morto. Gli hanno rubato la borsa. S' è tagliate le dita. Sua Maestà ha perduto la corona. Questo è il cavallo di sua signoria. Si gettano ai piedi di vostra signoria. Si gettano ai vostri piedi. Metteteri la borsa in tasca.

XV.—DEMONSTRATIVE PRONOUNS.

Come si chiama questo paese? Chi sono questi fanciulli? Che sono queste carte? Non parlate a quei fanciulli. Quel cavallo è zoppo. Quei cavalli sono zoppi. Quello specchio è rotto. Quegli specchi sono rotti.

Che fate in questa città? Che fate in cotesta città? Che fa vostro figlio in quella città? Portatemi cotesto quadro. Andatemi a prender quel quadro. Portatemi cotesti quadri. Portate via questo quadro. Portate via questi quadri. Andatemi a prender quei quadri. Portate via quei quadri.

Questi è il mio migliore amico. Colei è la mia più gran nemica. Non posso soffrire nè il marito nè la moglie; Quegli è superbo, questa è sciocca. I nemici mi deridono, gli amici mi compiangono; non so se più m' irritino quelli o questi.

Scegli tra la fortuna e la virtù; quella può farti ricco, questa sola felice. Chi disse questo? Chi ha fatto ciò? Fate ciò ch' io comando. Credete tutto ciò che dice. Non credete ciò che dice colui.

Ha comprato questi campi: ha venduto quei campi. Ha comprato questi campi e venduti quelli. Non vendete il vostro campo a quell' avaro. Non vendete i vostri campi a quegli avari. Compra quei campi e vende questi.

XVI.—RELATIVE PRONOUNS.

L' uomo al quale parlate. L' uomo il quale vi parla. Il cavallo che ho comprato. Il danaro che vi ho prestato. Gli amici che ci hanno abbandonati. Gli amici che abbiamo abbandonati. Le signore che avete invitate.

I tempi in cui viviamo. La lettera che ho letta. La casa che abitiamo. I pericoli da cui siamo scampati. L' uomo che si gloria. La donna che odiate. La casa da cui (*or* donde) vengo. La fanciulla che avete veduta.

Le penne che ho temperate. L' amico con cui io dimorava. Chi siete? Che volete? Di che parlate? Di chi parlate? Chi vedete? Che vedete? Chi mi vuole? Che vi avvenne? In questo mondo chi sorge chi cade.

Che casa è questa? Quale di queste case è la vostra? Che bella cosa! Che pazzi! Quanti pazzi? Che volete darmi? A che ora? Di chi è la colpa? Che età avete? *or* Quanti anni avete? Di che ridete? Che giorno è? Indovinate chi abbiamo a pranzo.

Chi spira spera. Compiangete chi soffre. Non avete che fare? Non ho che sperare. Ha chi l' inganna. Beato chi piange. Chi viene? Che terra è questa? Qual è la vostra terra? Sapete che ha fatto.

XVII.—INDEFINITE PRONOUNS.

Ogni momento. Ogni ora. Ogn' uomo. Ogni donna. Non temo alcun nemico. Non temo alcuno. Qualcuno è alla porta. Qualche amico è alla porta. Abbiamo invitato alcuni amici per questa sera. Alcuni signori ed alcune signore. Alcuni nostri amici ed alcuni nostri parenti.

Ho qualche libro (*or* alcuni libri). Non ho alcun libro (*or* non ho libri). Ho dati via tutti i libri. Tutti i miei libri. Tutte le donne sono angeli. Tutti sono invitati. Ho perduto tutto. Aveva molti amici; gli ho perduti tutti. Aveva una gran sostanza; l' ha perduta tutta.

Tutta la speranza che aveva. Non ho alcuna speranza. Qualunque ragione abbiate. Per quante ragioni abbiate. Non avete alcuna ragione. Nessuno mi odia. Non debbo

nulla ad alcuno. Vedete alcuno? Non vedo alcuno (*or* nessuno). Non lo trovo in alcun luogo (*or* in nessun luogo). Qualcuno vi domanda.

L' uno è bugiardo, l' altro è credulo; nè l' uno nè l' altro merita fede: O l' uno o l' altro ha torto. Hanno entrambi torto (*or* hanno torto ambedue; *or* hanno torto tutti due). Nè l' uno nè l' altro ha ragione. Li conosco entrambi. Li conosco tutti. Ne conosco un altro. Non ne conosco altri (*or* non ne conosco alcun altro). Qualch' altro (*or* qualcun altro) pagherà (or altri pagherà).

XVIII.—REGULAR VERBS.

Amo gli amici. Teme il nemico. Che temi? Che temete? Dorme. Dormono tutta la notte? Temi Iddio e non temere altra cosa. Mi amano com' io gli amo. Dormivano. Quanto tempo dormirà? Quanto dormi? Dormirebbe ancora.

Voi mi lodate. Vi lodiamo. Lo biasimerete. La biasimeranno. Canta bene. Canterà se la pregate. Cantava sempre quand' io la pregava. Dormivano quando entraste. Cantavamo quando ci chiamaste.

Canterò se voi ballate. Ballerei se voi cantaste. Rideranno se sospirate. Dormivano mentre voi parlavate. Torneranno senza di voi. Tornerebbero prima di voi. Quando tornate? Quando tornerete? Tornate domani.

Cantami le canzoni della tua patria. Cantatemi le canzoni della vostra patria. Rida se l' osa. Non perda il tempo. Non perdere il tempo. Non perdete il tempo. Dorma se si crede sicuro. Dormano se si credono sicuri.

Non lo temerei se tutti i suoi amici gli combattessero al fianco. Vi difenderei se mille nemici vi assalissero. Passerebbero il tempo piacevolmente se studiassero la

mattina e giocassero la sera. La stimereste più se la conosceste meglio.

Temendolo lo sfuggiva. Vedendola le parlò. Vuol piuttosto esser temuto che amato. Circondato dai nemici combatteva tuttavia.

XIX.—AUXILIARY VERBS.

Ho fame. Avete sete. Noi avevamo caldo ed eglino avevano freddo. Egli aveva fretta. Avrete sonno. Se voi aveste ragione io avrei torto. Avevano ragione entrambi. L' amico mio ha torto. Avete giudizio. Perchè hai tanta fretta? Che freddo ha!

Abbi giudizio, figlio mio. Ho comprato quei libri. Questi sono i libri che ho comprati. Questa è la penna che ha temperata. Le penne sono state temperate. Ho temperate le penne. Avrete pazienza. Abbi pazienza. Avrà coraggio. Abbiano coraggio.

Abbia pazienza. Siamo misericordiosi, perdoniamo. Sareste certo di riuscire se aveste pazienza. Vi sarà perdonato se domandate perdono. Avrete amici se non siete così volubile. Sarebbero ricchi se avessero tutto ciò che avevano una volta.

Il paese sarebbe armato se avesse timore di guerra. I nemici sarebbero battuti se avessero il coraggio di assalirci. Abbi pietà. Siate giusti se volete esser liberi. Abbian vita e libertà. Sia questa l' ultima prova della mia bontà. Siate amici.

Purchè tu abbia imparato. Chiunque egli sia nol temo. Qualunque potere egli abbia. Tenterei se fossi certo di riuscire. Benchè sia stato ingannato. Ogni qual volta si penta. Ovunque sia arrestato.

L' ho ingannato. S' è ingannato. Si sarebbero ingan-

nati. Si parla di guerra. Questi uccelli si trovano nelle montagne. Non si credettero le nuove. Questi prodigi si vedono ogni giorno. Quì si parla Francese. I cavalli si vendono a miglior mercato nell' inverno che nell' estate.

L' amicizia si rafferma col tempo. I fanciulli si guastano per troppa bontà. Si comprano e si vendono gli uomini come il bestiame. Ci voleva più pazienza.

XX.—MOODS AND TENSES.

Mentre ella cantava sentii un romore. Ella parlava ed io ascoltava. Io ascoltava tutto il tempo ch' ella cantava. Lo credetti perchè voi me ne assicuraste. Egli me lo raccontava, *or* stava raccontando quando lo chiamarono e lo menarono via. Pioveva ed io non aveva ombrella.

L' esercito tornava di Francia quando il Re convocò un concilio. In tempi antichi gli uomini più grandi aravano la terra. Udì ch' erano schiavi. Alessandro trattava i suoi nemici umanamente. Alessandro trattò Poro da Re.

Quanti erano in quella casa furono arrestati. Era ancor giovine quando fu innalzato al trono. La guerra durò trent' anni. La guerra infieriva tuttavia quando morì il Re. Nel tempo che i Francesi furon cacciati d' Italia. A quel tempo i Francesi erano ancora in Italia.

Credo che piova. Vedo che piove. Credeva che gli aveste parlato. Era certo che gli avevate parlato. Son certo che lo ama. Credo per certo che ella lo ami. V' imaginate ch' io sia pazzo? Ditemi dove andate. Sapete voi dove andiate?

Io avea veduto il vostro pericolo prima che vi cadeste. Quando ebbi veduto il pericolo, lo evitai. Se aveste

veduto il pericolo, lo avreste evitato. Tosto ch' ebbero ricevuto l' ordine ubbidirono. Se avessero ricevuto la lettera, avrebbero risposto. Quando ricevo una lettera, rispondo.

Lo hanno lasciato morire. Non ho potuto impedirlo. Basta che lo domandiate, *or* vi basta il domandarlo. Vi supplicano di perdonargli. Desiderano abbracciarli. Si contentano di dimenticare il passato. Mi comandano di partir subito. Desideravano pagare.

Domando d' essere ascoltato. Vi consiglio ad ascoltarmi. Mi esortarono ad aver pazienza. Gli alberi cominciano a germogliare. Ho imparato a tacermi. Siete pronto a battervi? Non mi sforzate a punirvi. Parla così per insultarmi. Scherzano per farvi ridere. Vi presto un libro da leggere.

Bisogna esser cauti. Non basta aver danaro, *or* non basta l' aver danaro. La più gran vittoria è il vincer sè stesso. Il miglior modo di conseguir gli onori non è sempre il meritarli. Prodigo nello spendere il danaro altrui, *or* l' altrui. Senza pari nel dipingere.

Guadagna il vitto coll' insegnare. Si affogò nell' attraversare il fiume. Mortali sempre ondeggianti tra la speranza ed il timore. Odo una donna che canta. Vidi una donna che coglieva fiori. Vidi alcuni fanciulli che ballavano. Un gruppo di fanciulli danzanti.

XXI.—IRREGULAR VERBS.

FIRST CONJUGATION.

Credo che alcuno manchi. Mancano due pagine. Abbiam dato la nostra parola e non mancheremo. Vi stancherete presto della mia compagnia. Lo pregherebbero indarno. Temi ch' io mi vendichi. Bisogna ch' io trovi qualcuno che mi leghi questi libri.

che dici. Ciò che disse fece. Avete disfatto tutto il bene che avevate fatto.

Rifatelo e forse lo farete meglio. Fanno tutto con troppa fretta. Non soddisfanno alcuno. Sarete soddisfatto. Vi assuefacevate al nostro clima. Non mi contraddite. Tutti i poveri lo benedicono. Il suo lavoro fu benedetto. Benedetto sia il suo santo nome.

Fate ciò che vi piace. Ella piace a me, ma io non piaccio a lei. Tutte le vostre sorelle mi piacciono. In che vi dispiaccio? Dal primo istante ch' ella mi piacque. Per qualche tempo mi compiacqui della sua compagnia. Là giacciono i nostri maggiori.

Tacque pel rimanente della giornata. I nostri guerrieri giacevano sparsi pel campo. Cadevano oppressi dal calore della giornata. Soggiacquero a tanti assalti. Quella onestissim' anima taceva. Vi compiaceranno. Tacciano entrambi.

Ivi giacevano le rovine. Chi sedeva, chi giaceva. Dì loro che seggano. Non permise che sedesse.

Fa ciò ch' io dico non ciò che fo. Vedete quel ch' io fo, *or* sto facendo? Vedo che fate. Fanno il loro dovere. Altri siede, altri giace sul suolo. Se sedete su quello scanno cadrete. Queste cose accadono talvolta. Che vi è accaduto.

Accadde un giorno che i fanciulli facevano un gran romore. Chinò la fronte e tacque. Sedeva sul suolo e taceva. La città siede sulla marina. Colei che siede sopra l' acque. Seggono alla sua sinistra.

Che dirà vostro padre? La vedrò io mai? Provvederanno tutto ciò che abbisogna. Previdero cio che accadde poco dopo. Che faranno i vostri amici? Preveggo grandi sciagure. Non lo rividi mai. Vedremo.

Siedi e favella. Vi prego che sediate. Questa è la via che conduce agli onori. Questa strada mi condurrà in città. Che ho fatto? Che dicesti? Che farò? Dicono che sia fatta la pace. Vi piacciono i fiori? Quale di questi quadri vi piace più? So chi vi piace.

XXIV.—IRREGULAR VERBS

SECOND CONJUGATION.

Fa quel che puoi. Chi fa quel che può fa quel che deve. Mi deve tutto ciò che sa. Mi debbono tutto ciò che sanno. Pongo tutta la mia speranza in te. Scelgono sempre il meglio. Rimasi in quel paese per un mese. Spegno la sete mia nell' acqua chiara.

Di che ti duoli? Vorrei se potessi. Potresti se volessi. Vuole e disvuole cento volte il giorno. Questi cavalli non valgono cento scudi. L' uomo propone e Dio dispone. Lo suppongono ma non lo sanno.

Non credo che valgano tanto. Scelgono sempre il peggio. Se vi colgono vi ammazzano. Che non mi han tolto? Sostenne le sue perdite con gran fermezza. Lo manten nero a proprie spese.

Mai non mi parve sì bella. Non debbon pentirsi. Tosto che lo seppi me ne dolsi. Mi duole il capo. Gli dolgono i denti. La lingua batte dove il dente duole. Più burbero che non suole. Soglion viaggiare nell' estate.

Sappi ch' io non bevo mai acqua. Val più di tutto l' oro del mondo se mi vuol bene. Tutti sapevano che si volevano bene. Che vuoi? Che volete? Che vogliono quei birbanti? Ricordati di me e voglimi bene. Sta bene.

Non so ballare. Non posso camminare. Camminate se potete. Sonate se sapete. Ravvisami se puoi, *or* riconoscimi se sai. Farò tutto ciò che so e posso. Non possiam sempre ciò che vogliamo, *or* non si può sempre quel che si vuole. Non sappiam mai ciò che possiamo finchè non proviamo, *or* non si sa mai ciò che si può finchè non si prova. Non vogliate negarmelo.

Cadde in mare. Andate pei fatti vostri. Tutto il male non viene per nuocere. Ho preso casa per un anno. Passeggiavamo per la città. L' ho incontrato per le strade. Pagarono cinque scudi per uno, *or* per ciascuno. Guadagnava due scudi il giorno, *or* per giorno.

Come osate guardarmi in faccia? Aiutatemi col consiglio. Molto egli oprò col senno e colla mano. Leggo per divertimento. Che strani pensieri mi corrono per la mente! Fatelo per amor del cielo.

È illustre per nascita. È fatto illustre pei suoi talenti. È chiaro per grandi azioni. Son venuto per amor vostro. Non so fingere neppur per gioco. Aspettatemi in giardino. È conosciuto per mariuolo.

L' ho detto per ischerzo. Voi mi consigliate da vero amico. Bramo parlarvi da solo a solo. Non agisce da uomo dabbene. Imparerete il resto colla pratica. Lo farete a vostro agio, *or* con vostro comodo. Il mondo va sempre di male in peggio.

Verrà fra tre giorni. Ciò sia detto tra noi. Tra amici si può parlare liberamente. Vengon da noi ogni sera. Andate da lui. Pranziamo dalla marchesa stasera. Ondeggia tra la speranza ed il timore. Verrà senz' altro. Il corpo giaceva senza senso e senza vita. Non farò nulla senza di voi. Lontan dagli occhi lontan dal cuore.

XXVIII.—ADVERBS.

Cammina lentamente. Non mi guardate sì fieramente. Mi ha servito fedelmente. Si fece innanzi arditamente. Posso parlar più chiaro? amo i miei figliuoli teneramente Gli darò mia figlia sicurissimamente.

Come dolce parla e dolce ride. Vi dirò la cosa per minuto. Quando vengono? Donde vengono? Quanti

ve ne sono? Dove vanno? Gli attendiamo domani. Oggi è l' ultimo giorno.

Quì giace un Cardinale, che fece male e bene, ma il ben lo fece male, e il mal lo fece bene. Vi ho cercato dappertutto. Non posso mai trovari. È sempre in collera. Forse ha ottime ragioni di esserlo.

Ho appena un minuto da perdere. È già quasi troppo tardi. Avete forse fretta? Non dovreste già esser tanto impaziente. Parlate molto e pensate poco. Vorrei parlaste meno e pensaste più.

Posso appena crederlo. Sono per lo più bricconni. Si lodano a gara. Si adulano a vicenda. E così siete venuto finalmente? Tutta la città fu sossopra. Si levò di subito un gran temporale.

Fu sepolto appena morto. Ha appena vent' anni. È quasi troppo giovine per esserle madre. E assai vecchia per esserle nonna.

XXIX.—CONJUNCTIONS.

Ve lo dico perchè lo sappiate. Sgridatelo quando viene. Perchè viene così tardi? È assai misero benchè tanto ricco. Ha lasciato l' ombrello benchè diluviava. Se ne pentirà per altro.

S' io vo chi resta; s' io resto chi va? Non so se vada bene. Nè furto è il mio nè ladro io sono. Prenderò e il ronzino e il danaro. Non avrete nè il danaro nè il ronzino: O l' uno o l' altro voglio averlo.

Quanto son tristo dacchè gli amici son partiti! Non saro lieto finchè non ritornino. Faremo festa quando tornate. Non m' importa ch' ei vada o resti, purchè tu non mi lasci. Io mi affliggeva della tua assenza tanto più che tu non iscrivevi.

Questi è il migliore, anzi l' unico amico mio. Bramo anzi che tu mi dica ciò ch' io ho da fare. Non insistete più oltre, poichè non posso accordare ciò che chiedete. Non lo accorderei quand' anche potessi. Sa ch' io non ho danaro, pure mi prega sempre ch' io gliene presti. Non ne avrà da me ciò non ostante.

Non vi sarà perdonato se non vi pentite. Siccome se ne sono andati senza licenza, saranno trattati da disertori. Giacchè gli perdonate dategli la mano. Non v' è nulla da lodare in lei fuorchè la bellezza. Pentiti affinchè il cielo ti perdoni.

S' io potessi ridere riderei pur di cuore. Andate pure poichè siete stanco di noi. Parla come se fosse (*or* quasi fosse) il padrone.

XXX.—INTERJECTIONS.

Oh pietosa colei che mi soccorse, e tu cortese che ubbidisti tosto! Benedetto sia il giorno, il mese e l' anno! Povera me! mio marito m' ha abbandonata! Povero me! Mia moglie m' ha ingannato!

Ahi sconsigliato re! or via, sia tratto a morte! *or* si tragga a morte! Oh cielo! che hai tu fatto? Oh! gloriosi giorni di vittoria! Oh! miei trascorsi tempi! Ah! potessi oggi morte aver quì dall' inimico brando!

Miseri noi, che siam se Iddio ci lascia! Deh! raggiornasse! Notte, su tosto, all' almo sole il campo cedi! Vedrolla? Oh, gioia! Ahi lassa me, che in tenebre incessanti vivo pur sempre!

Orsu! Troppo avete abusato della mia sofferenza. Zitto, fanciullo! Zitti, fanciulli! Non isvegliate il padre. Ohibò, vergogna! avete dimenticato il consiglio ch' io vi diedi? Grazie, Signore, mille grazie!

Non mi tormentate per carità! Mandatelo via, per amor del cielo! Se n' è andato, grazie a Dio! Che peccato che non ci abbiamo pensato prima! Che bella cosa se potessimo far senza di lui! Peccato che sia così tardi!

È curiosa! Voi ripetete sempre la stessa cosa! stiam freschi, se non dobbiamo mai aprir bocca!

JOHN CHILDS AND SON, PRINTERS.